

الله
رسول
محمد

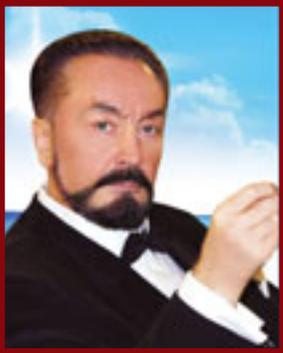
ADNAN OKTAR
(HARUN YAHYA)



HOW THE SCOURGE OF THE 20TH CENTURY
IS PREPARING FOR FRESH SAVAGERY

COMMUNISM IN AMBUSH





ABOUT THE AUTHOR: Adnan Oktar, who writes under the pen name Harun Yahya, was born in Ankara in 1956. Since the 1980s, the author has published many books on faith-related, scientific and political issues. He is well known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

All of the author's works share one single goal: To convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as God's existence and unity and the hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies. His more than 300 works, translated into 76

different languages, enjoy a wide readership across the world.

By the will of God, the books of Harun Yahya will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.

Communism is an ideology that drowned the 20th century in blood. Communist dictators such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Pol Pot slaughtered 120 million people without batting an eye. Most of these were civilians from their own people. Tens of millions of men and women, from the elderly to young people and babies in arms, lost their lives to this cold, hard, savage ideology. This book exposes the scourge of Communism and reveals the materialist philosophy and the Darwinist dogma underlying it. More importantly, it draws attention to a greater danger. The Communist threat has not disappeared from the face of the earth: Even now it is lying in wait! This source of bloodshed, which has cost the lives of 120 million, still exists. Unless its ideological underpinnings—materialism and Darwinism—are destroyed, it will insidiously flourish under the mistaken belief that “Communism is dead” and reappear for fresh savagery and cruelty when the time is ripe.



**ARASTIRMA
PUBLISHING**

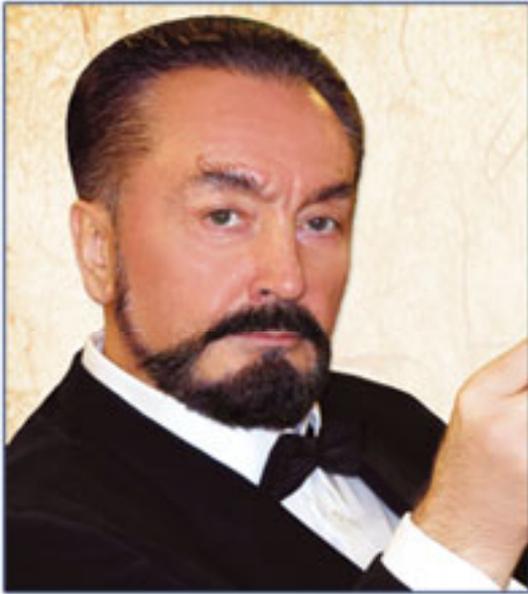
الله
رسول
محمد

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ



Adnan Oktar
(Harun Yahya)

KOMÜNİZM PUSUDA



About the Author

Now writing under the pen-name of Harun Yahya, Adnan Oktar was born in Ankara in 1956. Having completed his primary and secondary education in Ankara, he studied fine arts at Istanbul's Mimar Sinan University and philosophy at Istanbul University. Since the 1980s, he has published many books on political, scientific, and faith-related issues. Harun Yahya is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and

such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

Harun Yahya's works, translated into 73 different languages, constitute a collection for a total of more than 65,000 pages with 40,000 illustrations.

His pen-name is a composite of the names Harun (Aaron) and Yahya (John), in memory of the two esteemed Prophets who fought against their peoples' lack of faith. The Prophet's seal on his books' covers is symbolic and is linked to their contents. It represents the Qur'an (the Final Scripture) and the Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), last of the prophets. Under the guidance of the Qur'an and the Sunnah (teachings of the Prophet [pbuh]), the author makes it his purpose to disprove each fundamental tenet of irreligious ideologies and to have the "last word," so as to completely silence the objections raised against religion. He uses the seal of the final Prophet (pbuh), who attained ultimate wisdom and moral perfection, as a sign of his intention to offer the last word.

All of Harun Yahya's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as God's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies.

Harun Yahya enjoys a wide readership in many countries, from India to America, England to Indonesia, Poland to Bosnia, Spain to Brazil, Malaysia to Italy, France to Bulgaria and Russia. Some of his books are available in English, French, German, Spanish, Italian, Portuguese, Urdu, Arabic, Albanian, Chinese, Swahili, Hausa, Dhivehi (spoken in Maldives), Russian, Serbo-Croat (Bosnian), Polish,

Malay, Uyгур Turkish, Indonesian, Bengali, Danish and Swedish.

Greatly appreciated all around the world, these works have been instrumental in many people recovering faith in God and gaining deeper insights into their faith. His books' wisdom and sincerity, together with a distinct style that's easy to understand, directly affect anyone who reads them. Those who seriously consider these books, can no longer advocate atheism or any other perverted ideology or materialistic philosophy, since these books are characterized by rapid effectiveness, definite results, and irrefutability. Even if they continue to do so, it will be only a sentimental insistence, since these books refute such ideologies from their very foundations. All contemporary movements of denial are now ideologically defeated, thanks to the books written by Harun Yahya.

This is no doubt a result of the Qur'an's wisdom and lucidity. The author modestly intends to serve as a means in humanity's search for God's right path. No material gain is sought in the publication of these works.

Those who encourage others to read these books, to open their minds and hearts and guide them to become more devoted servants of God, render an invaluable service.

Meanwhile, it would only be a waste of time and energy to propagate other books that create confusion in people's minds, lead them into ideological confusion, and that clearly have no strong and precise effects in removing the doubts in people's hearts, as also verified from previous experience. It is impossible for books devised to emphasize the author's literary power rather than the noble goal of saving people from loss of faith, to have such a great effect. Those who doubt this can readily see that the sole aim of Harun Yahya's books is to overcome disbelief and to disseminate the Qur'an's moral values. The success and impact of this service are manifested in the readers' conviction.

One point should be kept in mind: The main reason for the continuing cruelty, conflict, and other ordeals endured by the vast majority of people is the ideological prevalence of disbelief. This can be ended only with the ideological defeat of disbelief and by conveying the wonders of creation and Qur'anic morality so that people can live by it.

Considering the state of the world today, leading into a downward spiral of violence, corruption and conflict, clearly this service must be provided speedily and effectively, or it may be too late.

In this effort, the books of Harun Yahya assume a leading role. By the will of God, these books will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.



To the reader

- A special chapter is assigned to the collapse of the theory of evolution because this theory constitutes the basis of all anti-spiritual philosophies. Since Darwinism rejects the fact of creation—and therefore, God's existence—over the last 150 years it has caused many people to abandon their faith or fall into doubt. It is therefore an imperative service, a very important duty to show everyone that this theory is a deception. Since some readers may find the opportunity to read only one of our books, we think it appropriate to devote a chapter to summarize this subject.
- All the author's books explain faith-related issues in light of Qur'anic verses, and invite readers to learn God's words and to live by them. All the subjects concerning God's verses are explained so as to leave no doubt or room for questions in the reader's mind. The books' sincere, plain, and fluent style ensures that everyone of every age and from every social group can easily understand them. Thanks to their effective, lucid narrative, they can be read at one sitting. Even those who rigorously reject spirituality are influenced by the facts these books document and cannot refute the truthfulness of their contents.
- This and all the other books by the author can be read individually, or discussed in a group. Readers eager to profit from the books will find discussion very useful, letting them relate their reflections and experiences to one another.
- In addition, it will be a great service to Islam to contribute to the publication and reading of these books, written solely for the pleasure of God. The author's books are all extremely convincing. For this reason, to communicate true religion to others, one of the most effective methods is encouraging them to read these books.
- We hope the reader will look through the reviews of his other books at the back of this book. His rich source material on faith-related issues is very useful, and a pleasure to read.
- In these books, unlike some other books, you will not find the author's personal views, explanations based on dubious sources, styles that are unobservant of the respect and reverence due to sacred subjects, nor hopeless, pessimistic arguments that create doubts in the mind and deviations in the heart

First Edition: May 2003

Published by: ARAŞTIRMA PUBLISHING
Kayışdağı Mah. Değirmen Sok. No: 3
Ataşehir / İstanbul / Turkey - Tel: (+90 216) 6600059

Printed by: Vizyon Basımevi
Deposite İş Merkezi A6 Blok No: 309 İkitelli OSB
Küçükçekmece - İstanbul / Turkey - Tel: (+90) 212 6716151

All translations from the Qur'an are from
The Noble Qur'an: a New Rendering of its Meaning in English
by Hajj Abdalhaqq and Aisha Bewley, published by Bookwork,
Norwich, UK. 1420 CE/1999 AH.

C O N T E N T S

INTRODUCTION	8
CHAPTER I HOW COMMUNISM BEGAN	10
CHAPTER II THE HISTORY OF BOLSHEVIK SAVAGERY	24
CHAPTER III THE DULL WORLD OF COMMUNISM	90
CHAPTER IV RED TERROR IN ASIA	114
CHAPTER V COMMUNISM'S HOSTILITY TO RELIGION	156
CHAPTER VI COMMUNISM LURKS IN HIDING	178
CHAPTER VII THE COMMUNIST ORGANIZATION THAT SPRINGS OUT OF AMBUSH: THE PKK	204
APPENDIX I THE IMPORTANT REALITY THAT INVALIDATES MATERIALISM	248
APPENDIX II THE COLLAPSE OF DARWINISM	262

INTRODUCTION

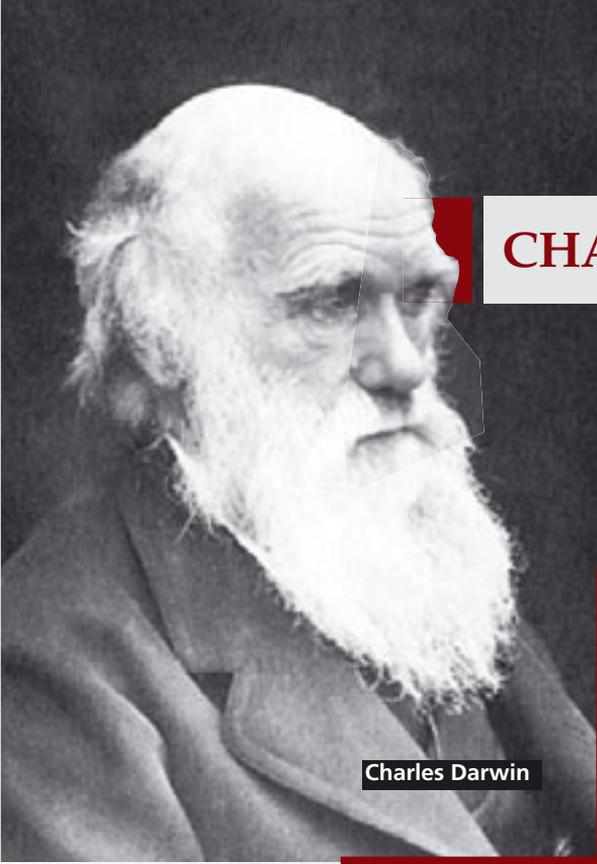
Communism has stamped its mark on the 20th century—a mark of aggression and cruelty, bloodshed and tears. Historians have estimated that its ideology has caused the death of 120 million people since the Russian Revolution of 1917. These casualties include not only soldiers killed on battlefields, but citizens murdered by their own governments. The whole world has seen the pitiless slaughter carried out by Communist leaders. One hundred million men and women, from the elderly to young people and infants, lost their lives to this cold, hard, savage ideology. Communist regimes have deprived tens of millions of their most basic rights and freedoms, ejecting people from their homes and systematically subjecting them to famines, slavery in labor camps and imprisonment. Millions have been the targets of Communist guerilla groups and terrorist organizations, and still others have lived in the fear of becoming targets for their bullets.

What are this ideology's roots? Where was Communism born? How did such a cruel, bloodthirsty worldview find adherents and supporters throughout the world? Why did it come to power and flourish, dragging millions in its wake? How did it come to an end, with the collapse of the Soviet Union? Or has it really ended, or does it still threaten every country on earth?

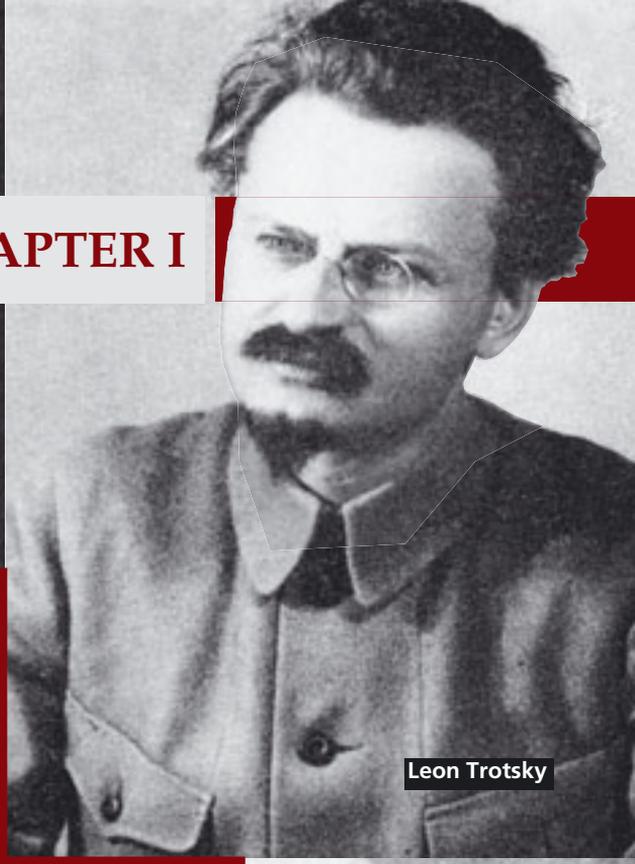
This book answers these questions, and draws our attention to a most important one: Does this serious threat still exist in the world? Regrettably, yes because communism is waiting in ambush!

This machine of bloodshed, which has cost the lives of 120 million, still exists in a disguised manner, concealing its insidious activities. Its outward appearance may have changed, its adherents' names may be different, but it still awaits an opportunity to wreak pain on humanity once again, as it has in the past. This book's vitally important purpose is to rip the mask off this insidious and growing threat and reveal the true face of the Communist ideology that has caused so much pain and trouble.

CHAPTER I



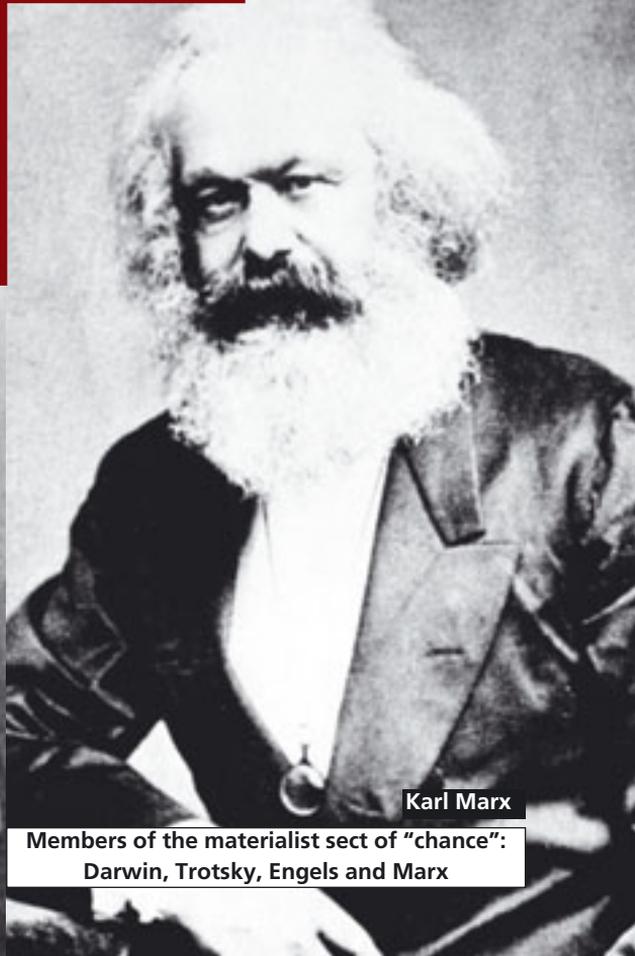
Charles Darwin



Leon Trotsky



Friedrich Engels



Karl Marx

Members of the materialist sect of "chance":
Darwin, Trotsky, Engels and Marx

HOW COMMUNISM BEGAN



In order to understand Communism's birth, we must examine European culture in the 18th and 19th centuries. Beginning in the second century A.D. under the Emperor Constantine, Europe gradually accepted Christianity. Christian culture held sway until the Enlightenment of the 18th century, when a number of artists and thinkers began embracing the influence of pagan Greek and Roman culture and consequently, rejecting the dictates of religion. The Enlightenment's most important political result was the French Revolution, which was not only an uprising against the ancient regime, but at the same time, a revolt against religion.

The foundation of the French Revolution was established by the influence of such anti-religious thinkers as Voltaire, Diderot and Montesquieu. From 1789 on, the Enlightenment's pagan, anti-religious tendencies of became obvious. After an intense propaganda campaign, the Jacobins came to lead the revolution, established a movement against orthodox Catholicism, and even managed to create a new religion. Revolutionary worship, seen first during the national Feast of the Federation on July 14, 1790, spread quickly. Robespierre, one of the leaders of the bloody revolution, explained its rules and principles in a report, wherein he called it "The Worship of Supreme Being." Paris's famous Nôtre Dame cathedral was changed into what he called the "Temple of Reason." Statues of Christian saints were removed from the cathedral walls, replaced by the statue of an allegorical woman called

the "Goddess of Reason." In the course of the French Revolution, many priests and nuns were killed; churches and monasteries were plundered and destroyed.

At the same time, the philosophy of materialism reawakened and began to spread throughout Europe. Certain ancient Greek philosophers had first proposed this philosophy, which believes that only matter exists, that living things—indeed, human consciousness itself—are only "matter in motion." In the 18th century, two important names in the French Revolution, Denis Diderot and his close friend Baron d'Holbach, adopted this philosophy and imposed it on the people. In his book called *Système de la Nature* (The System of Nature) published in 1770, Baron d'Holbach used a few so-called "scientific" suppositions to propose that only matter and energy existed. A fanatical atheist, D'Holbach was opposed to the concept of morality advocating that human beings should take all the pleasure they can and do everything they can to get it.

In the 18th century, a few thinkers adopted materialism, but it became much more widespread in the 19th, overflowing the borders of

France to take root in other European countries. At the beginning of the 20th century, two important Materialist thinkers appeared in Germany: Ludwig Büchner and Karl Vogt. Vogt tried to explain human rationality in terms of a simile: "the brain secretes thought just as the liver secretes bile." Not even the Materialists of his time accepted that nonsensical analogy.

Despite the proffering of such idiotic proposals, materialism was adopted by anti-religious forces,



Communism's roots stretch back to the French Revolution, when hostility to religion was embodied by the "goddess of reason." She later appeared on Communist posters, like the one on the left.

who started to impose it on European societies. Propaganda insisted that materialism was the foundation of reason and science—a deception that quickly spread among the enlightened, moving first from France to Germany and then, gradually, throughout the rest of Europe. In this respect, Freemasonry was an important ally. Masons adopted materialism as a religion and, in the 19th century, many enlightened Europeans became its members.

As this ancient dogma spread, there were attempts to adapt materialism to several branches of science:

1. To natural science, by the English naturalist Charles Darwin.
2. To social science, by the German philosophers Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels.

Darwin's adaptation is called the theory of evolution, while Marx and Engel's is known as Communism.

Marx and Darwin

It's possible to say that Darwin's theory includes that of Marx and Engels, because Communism is also a theory of "evolution" adapted to history and sociology. Anton Pannekoek, a renowned Darwinist-Marxist thinker, sums this up in his book *Marxism and Darwinism* published at the beginning of the 20th century:

The scientific importance of Marxism as well as of Darwinism consists in their following out the theory of evolution, the one upon the domain of the organic world, of things animate; the other, upon the domain of society... Thus, both teachings, the teachings of Darwin and of Marx, the one in the domain of the organic world and the other upon the field of human society, raised the theory of evolution to a positive science. In doing this they made the theory of evolution acceptable to the masses as the basic conception of social and biological development. ¹

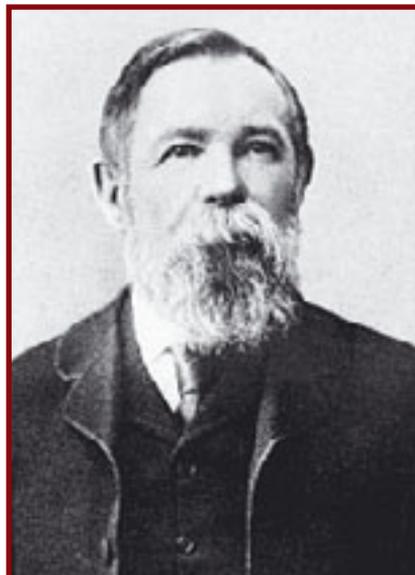
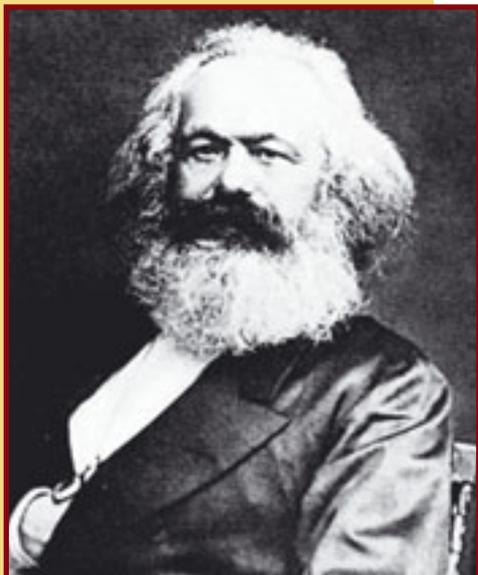
Darwinism and Marxism are fully compatible in two basic arguments:

1. Darwinism proposed that all existing things consist of "matter in motion." This alleges that God neither created nor ordered matter and that therefore, all life arose by chance. Human beings are a species of animal, evolved from other, lesser animals. But these claims rest on no scientific proof and have been proven false by subsequent scientific discoveries. But

Darwin's theory harmonizes with the views of Marx and Engels, who believed that only matter existed, and that the whole of human history can be explained in material terms. (For more information, please refer to *Darwinism Refuted: How the Theory of Evolution Breaks Down in the Light of Modern Science* by Harun Yahya, Goodword Books, 2002 and *The Evolution Deceit* by Harun Yahya, Ta-Ha Publishers, 2002)

2. Darwinism proposed that "**conflict**" is the motivating force that brought about development in living creatures. His basic supposition was that the natural world's resources weren't sufficient to support living things; that therefore, organisms had to fight a constant struggle that drove evolution. The **dialectical** method adopted by Marx and Engels is the same as Darwin's. According to dialectics, the single motive force underlying development in the universe is the conflict between opposites. Human history has progressed by means of this conflict. Humanity itself has advanced in the same way.

When examined closely, the theories of Marx-Engels and Darwin appear to be in total harmony, as if they have arisen from a single source.



Engels (right) saw Darwin and Marx (left) as equals, from the point of view of Communist theory. According to Engels, Marx applied materialism to the social sciences, and Darwin applied it to biology.

Darwin applied materialist philosophy to nature, while Marx-Engels applied it to history.

In fact, **Karl Marx** was the first to realize Darwin's important contribution to materialism. Reading Darwin's *The Origin of Species* after its publication in 1859, Marx found in it great support for his own theory. A letter he wrote to Engels on December 19, 1860, says that Darwin's book "**contains the basis in natural history for our views.**"² In a letter to Lassalle in January 16, 1861, he says, "**Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in natural science for the class struggle in history.**"³

Marx's dedication to Darwin of his greatest work, *Das Kapital*, shows the common mind that they shared. In the German edition of his book that he sent Darwin, Marx wrote with his own hand, "Mr Charles Darwin on the part of his sincere admirer Karl Marx." ⁴

Darwinism held such a great significance for communism that, no sooner had the book of Darwin been published, Engels wrote the following in his letter to Marx; "**Darwin, whom I am just now reading, is splendid.**" ⁵

Engels again expressed his admiration for Darwin elsewhere as follows: "Nature is the test of dialectics, and it must be said . . . that in the last resort, nature works dialectically and not metaphysically . . . In this connection, Darwin must be named before all others."⁶ Elsewhere, he said that, "Just as Darwin discovered the law of evolution in organic nature, so Marx discovered the law of evolution in human history."⁷

Through the words, "Just as Darwin discovered the law of evolution in organic nature, so Marx discovered the law of evolution in human history" Engels was exalting Darwin to a position on par with Marx. ⁸



According to Plekhanov, a leader of Russian Communism, Marxism is "Darwinism in its application to social sciences".

Just like other communist leaders, Lenin, too, frequently emphasized that Darwin's theory provided the fundamental foundation for the dialectic materialist philosophy he advocated. He expressed in one of his statements his stance on Darwinism as follows:

Darwin put an end to the belief that the animal and vegetable species bear no relation to one another, except by chance, and that they were created by God, and hence immutable. ⁹

When Lenin said that Darwin "put an end to the belief that life was created by God," he was only uttering these words out of an ideological concern, under the primitive scientific conditions of his era. Science dealt one fatal blow after another to Darwin's theory, both in the years when Lenin was still alive, and in the forthcoming years and decades. Georgy Valentinovich Plekhanov, one of the leaders of Russian Communism whom Lenin praised for his command of all international Marxist literature, summed it up succinctly when he said that Marxism is "**Darwinism in its application to social sciences.**" ¹⁰

As for Stalin, he was expressing his high regard for Darwin's ideas as follows:

In order to disabuse the minds of our seminary students of the myth that the world was created in six days, we had to acquaint ourselves with the geological origin and age of the earth, and be able to prove them in argument; we had to familiarize ourselves with Darwin's teachings. ¹¹

By saying in one of his public addresses that "**The foundation of Chinese Socialism rests on Darwin and the theory of evolution,**" Mao, the founder of communist China, was clearly expressing the basic foundation upon which his communist system was established. ¹²

Professor Malachi Martin, of the Vatican's Pontifical Bible Institute explains the relation between Marx and Darwin in these words:

. . . when Charles Darwin published his theory of evolution, Marx regarded it as far more than theory. He seized upon it as his "scientific" proof that there was no kingdom of Heaven, only the kingdom of Matter. Darwin had vindicated Marx in his rejection of Hegel's [idealism]. Ignoring the fact that Darwin's theory of evolution was just that a theory. . . **Marx adapted Darwin's ideas to the social classes of his day.** . . Darwin's theory of evolution being what it was, Marx reasoned that the social

classes, like all matter, must always be in struggle with each other for survival and dominance.

Contemporary evolutionists also note the strong bond between Darwinism and Marxism. One of today's most famous proponents of the theory of evolution is the biologist Douglas Futuyma. In the preface to his *Evolutionary Biology*, he says, "Together with Marx's materialist theory of history and society... **Darwin hewed the final planks of the platform of mechanism and materialism.**"¹⁴ Another famous evolutionary paleontologist Stephen J. Gould, said that "Darwin applied a consistent philosophy of materialism to his interpretation of nature."¹⁵ Leon Trotsky who, together with Lenin, was one of the architects of the Russian Revolution, described the discovery of Darwin as "the highest triumph of the dialectic **in the whole field of organic matter.**"¹⁶

All this shows the great affinity between Darwinism and Marxism, that without Darwin's influence, there would have been no Marxist theory. And if Darwinism is invalid, we will understand that Marxism is invalid too. But the converse is true as well: In any society where Darwinism is widely accepted, the growth of Marxism is inevitable.

For this reason, it is very important to understand why Darwinism has no validity in the fields of either science or sociology. This understanding will prevent the revitalization of Marxism which stems from it, and which is lying in wait today—as well as forestalling any return to

In denying Creation, Darwin gave Communism a supposedly scientific foundation. Therefore Trotsky, one of the bloody leaders of the Bolshevik Revolution, regarded Darwin as the proponent of dialectic materialism in the field of the natural sciences.



the agonies that humanity has suffered over the previous century. History shows that without Darwinism, there can be no Marxism.

Darwinism's Spread and The Relationship Between Communism and Capitalism

When we investigate Darwinism's political influence, keep in mind that this theory is related not to one single ideology, but to many seemingly different ones. Apart from Communism, the wide spectrum of ideologies relying on Darwinism includes racism, imperialism, capitalism, and fascism. The common point that all these apparently independent, even contrary, ideologies share is their opposition to monotheistic religions and whatever moral values that these religions inculcate.

These ideologies' leaders see religious beliefs and values as impediments, and use Darwinism as a weapon to destroy them. Ironically, by opening a "breathing room" for their own ideologies in this way, they only strengthen competing ideologies. For example, capitalists claim that a Darwinist outlook is needed to legitimate the ruthless "struggle to survive" evident in the free market. In this way, they support the very Communism that they oppose.

Anton Pannekoek's book *Marxism and Darwinism* refers to this interesting paradox. He describes the support given to Darwinism by the bourgeoisie (Europe's wealthy capitalist class) in these words:

That Marxism owes its importance and position only to the role it takes in the proletarian class struggle, is known to all... Yet it is not hard to see that in reality Darwinism had to undergo the same experiences as Marxism. Darwinism is not a mere abstract theory which was adopted by the scientific world after discussing and testing it in a mere objective manner. No, immediately after Darwinism made its appearance, it had its enthusiastic advocates and passionate opponents... Darwinism, too, played a role in the class-struggle, and it is owing to this role that it spread so rapidly and had enthusiastic advocates and venomous opponents.

Darwinism served as a tool to the bourgeoisie in their struggle against the feudal class, against the nobility, clergy-rights and feudal lords. ...What the bourgeoisie wanted was to get rid of the old ruling powers standing in their way... With the aid of religion the priests held the great mass in sub-

jection and ready to oppose the demands of the bourgeoisie...Natural science became a weapon in the opposition to belief and tradition; science and the newly discovered natural laws were put forward; it was with these weapons that the bourgeoisie fought...

Darwinism came at the desired time; Darwin's theory that man is the descendant of a lower animal destroyed the entire foundation of Christian dogma. It is for this reason that **as soon as Darwinism made its appearance, the bourgeoisie grasped it with great zeal...** Under these circumstances, even the scientific discussions were carried on with the zeal and passion of a class struggle. The writings that appeared pro and con on Darwin have therefore the character of social polemics, despite the fact that they bear the names of scientific authors.¹⁷

The spread of Darwinism actually happened this way. The forces that held sway in Europe saw Darwinism as a rare opportunity to legitimate the capitalist order they had established in their own countries, and their imperialist colonial systems throughout the world. (For details, refer to *Disasters Darwinism Brought to Humanity*, Harun Yahya, Attique Publishers, 2000.) Darwinism's scientific inconsistency, its imaginary suppositions and nonsensical claims have totally been ignored. Those who regard it as a weapon against religion and morality have disseminated it for ideological purposes.

But the bourgeoisie—that is, the capitalist class responsible for Darwinism's dissemination—have supported both this theory and its rival. Why? Because Darwinism's spread and the concomitant destruction of religious belief have benefited Marxism as much they have capitalism. Religion teaches such values as moderation, modesty, brotherhood, self-sacrifice and compassion. With these removed, society becomes a savage arena in which the "struggle for survival" among capitalists goes on, much as does the class struggle between capitalists and Communists.

In the fall of 1871, European naturalists gathered at an international congress. One of the speakers, the German statesman and naturalist Rudolf Virchow, said, "Be careful of this theory, for this theory is very nearly related to the theory that caused so much dread in our neighboring country."¹⁸ The country he meant was France, and the theory was French Communism, which created the bloody **Paris Commune** of that year. (The Commune was a citywide revolt led by the Communists, at a



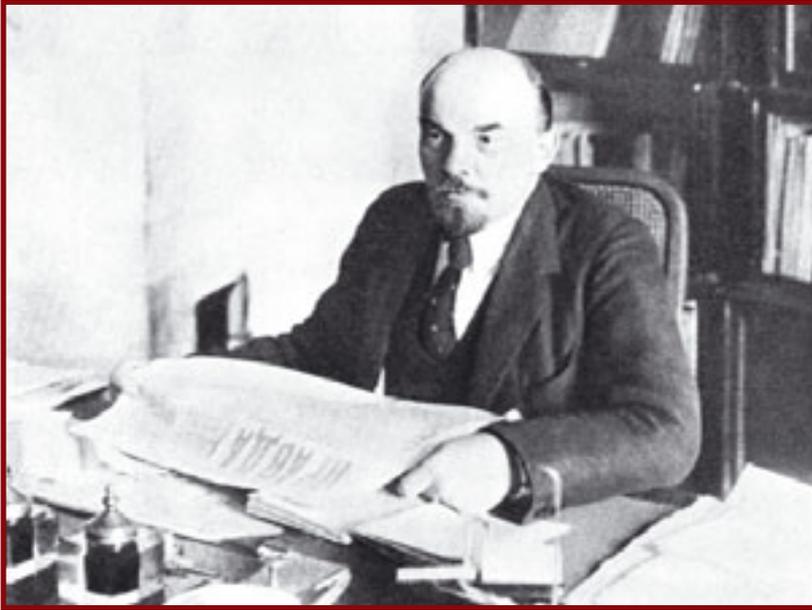
Clergy are lined up for execution in front of a firing squad of Paris Communards.

time when France was weakened after losing the Franco-Prussian War. For months, directors of the Commune administered the city. Widespread assaults were organized against religious centers and the clergy.)

Finally, despite their differences, both capitalists and Communists found common ground in their opposition to religion, and for that opposition, they found great support in Darwinism. For this reason, Communists believe that before the revolution can occur, a society must first become capitalist. To that end, they allow capitalism, i.e. the bourgeoisie, to flourish, which they consider as a stepping stone for communism in that society.

As the capitalist mentality grows and becomes widespread -in which Darwinist propaganda plays a vital role- society will initially be made to abandon their religion and then people will lose all their spiritual values, ethical sentiments, and the spirit of unity, solidarity, and love among them. As a result, beginning to see each other as opponents, or further yet, as enemies and losing the ability to act in concert, societies will be dragged into discord, conflict and terrorism, utterly laying the groundwork communism seeks to exploit.

Vladimir I. Lenin, leader of the Russian Revolution, expounds on this principle of Marxism as follows:



Lenin wrote that Communists and the bourgeoisie are the same, as regards their hostility towards religion. According to Lenin's interpretation, the conflict between Communism and capitalism is really just an "internal quarrel," and these two materialist ideologies' common enemy is religion.

Marxism teaches us that at a certain stage of its development a society which is based on commodity production and has commercial intercourse with civilised capitalist nations must inevitably take the road of capitalism.

All these principles of Marxism have been proved and explained in minute detail in general.

That is why a bourgeois revolution is in the highest degree advantageous to the proletariat. A bourgeois revolution is absolutely necessary in the interests of the proletariat.¹⁹

In his 1909 article titled "The Attitude of the Workers' Party to Religion," the Communist leader Lenin describes the role played by the capitalist bourgeoisie in opposing religion:

. . . the task of combating religion is historically the task of the revolutionary bourgeoisie. In the West, this task was to a large extent performed by bourgeois democracy, in the epoch of its revolutions against feudalism and medievalism... Both France and Germany have a tradition of bourgeois war on religion, which began long before socialism (the Encyclopaedists and Feuerbach). In Russia, because of the conditions of

our bourgeois-democratic revolution, this task too falls almost entirely on the shoulders of the working class.²⁰

Lenin is saying that capitalists have the obligation to wage war against religion, as they have in Europe; that because the capitalist class does not exist in Russia, he and his party will undertake this war against religion. His words show that in essence, the opposition between capitalism and Communism is an "inner conflict" only. Actually, these two forces' common enemy is religion.

One of the most bloody-minded dictators communism ever gave rise to, Joseph Stalin, also stated that among the funds transferred to other countries for the advancement of communism, the only money that went to waste was that sent to Turkey. Upon being asked about the reason for it, he responded by saying that **Anatolia was still committed to its religious traditions; thus, the propaganda activities will be able to prove effective only after the Turks have been alienated from their customs by the European capitalists.**²¹

As can be clearly seen so far, ideas, philosophies and ideologies distant from religious morality, such as savage capitalism and communism, are attempting to erode societies, alienate people from the absolute truth, and alienate them from moral values and humanity, so as to make them accept their own irreligious system. But none of their attacks against religion can succeed at all.

Don't forget, many have fought against true religion in the past, disobeying God's apostles and turning away from His holy Books. But in the end, they always failed, as God brought their false systems down in ruins and had His sincere servants with genuine faith prevail over these false systems and those who adhered to them.

Their fate is the same: God afflicts some of those who fight against His religion with troubles in this world, while others must wait for the Last Day to receive their painful torment. As the Qur'an (40:4-6) announces,

No one disputes God's Signs except those who disbelieve. Do not let their free movement about the earth deceive you. The people of Noah denied the truth before them, and the Confederates after them. Every nation planned to seize its Messenger and used false arguments to rebut the truth. So I seized them, and how [awful] was My punishment! So your Lord's Words about those who disbelieve proved true, that they are indeed the Companions of the Fire.

THE COMMON DELIRIUM OF FASCISM AND COMMUNISM: DARWINIST CONFLICT

Marx, the founder of Communism, stated that the only way to achieve historical development is through conflict. He thought that society and ideas could advance only by means of war and revolution; and maintained that everything would stay as it was, if not for struggle and opposition. By saying "Force is the midwife of every old society pregnant with a new one," Karl Marx (Das Capital, Vol.1, 1955, p.603) summoned millions to war, bloodshed, and slaughter.

These ideas of Marx won many supporters over the years. The Communist leader Lenin who presided over the cruelest slaughters, believed that **"development is the 'struggle' of opposites."** (V. I. Lenin, "On the Question of Dialectics," Collected Works, Volume 38, p. 359) He thought that this struggle must be formed through bloodshed.

Like the Communist leaders, Fascist leaders too believe that violence, revolution and war are the only means to advancement. Heinrich von Treitschke, the racist historian who was the most important influence in forming Hitler's ideas, said, **"nations could not prosper without intense competition, like the struggle for survival of Darwin..."** (L. Poliakov, Le Mythe Aryen, Editions Complexe, Calmann-Lévy, Bruxelles, 1987, p. 343) Mussolini was another Fascist leader who believed that violence was the motive force in history and that struggle would bring revolution. For him, **"the reluctance of England to engage in war only proved the evolutionary decadence of the British Empire."** (Robert E. D. Clark, Darwin: Before and After, London, Paternoster Press, 1948, p. 115)

Each of these ideologies' basic support is the struggle for life that, Darwin claimed, exists in nature. The conflict that forms the basis of Marx's dialectical materialism, and fascism's claim that conflict is a motive force, are nothing more than Darwin's theory of evolution applied to the social sciences.

These ideologies gave birth to two results: claims that continuous conflict is necessary, and steps to eradicate humanity completely, leading to endless bloodshed. Anyone adopting these ideologies can't avoid being in constant conflict with others, subjecting them to cruelty and bloodshed in the name of progress. They destroy peace and well being, as well as the love, respect, self-sacrifice and sharing that

God has commanded among people. Because of these ideologies, the last century was an era of pain and misery.

On the contrary, **violence and slaughter are not necessary.** Polarities are everywhere: night and day, light and darkness, negative and positive, hot and cold, good and bad. But **these oppositions have been created to emphasize beauty and to bring into being moral values like compassion, forgiveness, and peace.**

The same situation applies to the realm of ideas. The fact that people think differently is no reason for them to kill and massacre one another. God commands people to behave well towards their enemies and speak good words to people:

A good action and a bad action are not the same. Repel the bad with something better and, if there is enmity between you and someone else, he will be like a bosom friend. (Qur'an, 41:34)

As revealed in the Qur'an, people of conscience and intelligence solve every contention in an atmosphere of peace, trust and compassion. Those who cannot understand this and believe in the deceit of dialectical materialism have fought with one another for years, grappled with one another like wild animals and finally have lost their power as a nation. God reveals the truth in the following verse from the Qur'an (8:46):

Obey God and His Messenger and do not quarrel among yourselves, lest you lose heart and your momentum disappear. And be steadfast. God is with the steadfast.

As stated in this verse, people have departed from the way of God that His prophets revealed. Instead of establishing peace, they have turned the Earth into a breeding ground for cruelty. For this reason, they have lost all their power and have led themselves to destruction. It must not be forgotten that the moral virtues commanded in the Qur'an—compassion, mercy, self-sacrifice, justice—are the sources of strength for people and nations alike. Nonsense like dialectical materialism, the product of irreligious foolishness, brings only pain and disaster. The only way for people to find salvation, well-being, and security in this world is to live according to the moral teaching that God has commanded in the Qur'an.

CHAPTER II



Joseph Stalin, the murderer of 40 million people

THE HISTORY OF BOLSHEVIK SAVAGERY



The 20th century was the bloodiest period in human history, with world wars, genocide, concentration camps, the development of chemical and nuclear weapons, bombings, guerilla wars, and terrorist activities unheard before. As a result of this savagery, the number of dead is estimated in the hundreds of millions.

Why was the last century so bloody? First, advancing technology led to the development of weapons much more lethal than earlier ones. But the second and most important reason was that ideologies caused these weapons to be employed with terrible cruelty. The 20th century saw the violent harvest of the various "isms" that were founded in the 19th.

Communism, the bloodiest of these "isms," is by far the cruelest and also the most widespread. The number murdered by Communist regimes or organizations in the past hundred years stands at roughly 120 million. Just for the sake of this ideology, these people were removed from their homes, worked to death in concentration camps, exiled to perish on the Siberian steppes, subjected to the horrible tortures in the most horrible prisons, executed by brainwashed Communist militants, strangled, had their throats cut, or starved to death in deliberately-created famines.

The savagery of this red terror began first in Russia during the Bolshevik Revolution of 1917. It spread throughout the newly formed

Soviet Union and from there, to eastern Europe, China, Korea, Vietnam, Cambodia, some Latin American countries, Cuba and Africa.

The distribution by countries of a portion of the 120 million people slaughtered by communism is as follows:

The USSR: 20 million dead

China: 65 million dead

Vietnam: 1 million dead

North Korea: 2 million dead

Cambodia: 2 million dead

Eastern Europe: 1 million dead

Latin America: 150 thousand dead

Africa: 1.7 million dead

Afghanistan: 1.5 million dead

Lenin's Bloody Revolution

Karl Marx never led any political party. He was only a theoretician who tried to cram all of human history into the context of the rules of dialectical materialism. From his point of view, he interpreted the past and made predictions about the future, of which the greatest prediction was global revolution. He promised that the workers would destroy the capitalist system, after which a classless society would result.

In decades that passed since Marx's death in 1883, the revolution he'd announced so confidently never took place. In the capitalist countries of Europe, workers' living and working conditions improved, however slightly, abating the tension between the workers and the bourgeoisie. The revolution wasn't happening, and it wasn't going to happen.

In the early 1900s, another important name appeared in Russia: Vladimir Ilyich Lenin.

Lenin was gradually rising to prominence in Russia's Social Democratic Party, which Marxists had founded. Lenin gave Marxism a whole new interpretation. In his view, the revolution couldn't happen spontaneously, because the European working class had been sedated by what the bourgeoisie had offered them and in any other countries was no



Above: After Marx's death, Lenin interpreted his ideology, trying to fill the lacunae and reconcile the contradictions Marx had left. In so doing, Lenin produced the formula for bringing Communism to power by force of arms. The photograph above, taken in 1897 in St. Petersburg, shows Lenin (middle) with other Communist militants. Below: A Russian edition of Marx's *Das Kapital*.





Lenin speaking to a crowd in Red Square, 1919



Bolshevik revolutionaries posing with their weapons in St. Petersburg, November 1917

working class worth mentioning. To this problem, Lenin offered a militant solution: Marx's predicted revolution wouldn't be carried out by the workers (the proletariat, in Marxist literature), but by surrogates—a Communist Party of professional revolutionaries with military training, acting on the workers' behalf. By using armed intervention and propaganda, "**the Communist Party**" would bring about a political revolution. From the moment their authoritarian regime seized power, it would establish what Lenin called the "dictatorship of the proletariat." It would clear away opposition, abolish private property, and ensure society's advancement towards a Communist order.

With Lenin's theory, Communism would become the ideology of a group of armed terrorists. After him, hundreds of Communist Parties (or workers' parties devoted to bloody revolution) sprouted throughout the world.

What methods did the Communist Party intend for its revolution? Lenin answered this in both his writings and his actions: The Party would shed as much blood as possible. In 1906, eleven years before the Bolshevik Revolution, he advocated these terrifying ideas and methods in "Lessons of the Moscow Uprising" published in *Proletary* magazine:

"We would be deceiving both ourselves and the people if we concealed from the masses the necessity of a desperate, bloody war of extermination, as the immediate task of the coming revolutionary action."

"... attack, not defence, must be the slogan of the masses; the ruthless extermination of the enemy will be their task. "

" Let us remember that a great mass struggle is approaching. It will be an armed uprising. It must, as far as possible, be simultaneous. The masses must know that they are entering upon an armed, bloody and desperate struggle. Contempt for death must become widespread among them and will ensure victory."

" Social-Democracy must recognise this mass terror and incorporate it into its tactics, organising and controlling it of course, subordinating it to the interests and conditions of the working-class movement and the general revolutionary struggle."

Lenin wrote in the same magazine:

The phenomenon in which we are interested is the armed struggle. It is conducted by individuals and by small groups. Some belong to revolutionary organizations, while others (the majority in certain parts of Russia)



Lenin with a group of Bolshevik militants in 1918. In telegraphs he sent to Communist militants in all parts of the country, Lenin gave constant orders for executions, to be carried out in a way as to spread fear among the people.

do not belong to any revolutionary organization. Armed struggle pursues two different aims, which must be strictly distinguished: **in the first place, this struggle aims at assassinating individuals, chiefs and subordinates in the Army and police**; in the second place, it aims at the confiscation of monetary funds both from the government and from private persons. The confiscated funds go partly into the treasury of the party, partly for the special purpose of arming and preparing for an uprising, and partly for the maintenance of persons engaged in the struggle we are describing. The big expropriations (such as the Caucasian, involving over 200,000 rubles, and the Moscow, involving 875,000 rubles) went in fact first and foremost to revolutionary parties — small expropriations go mostly, and sometimes entirely, to the maintenance of the "expropriators".²²

At the beginning of the 1900's, an important divergence of ideas occurred in the Russian Social Democratic Party. The group led by Lenin

supported revolution by violence; while another group wanted to bring Marxism to Russia by more democratic means. The Leninists, though small in numbers, used various methods of pressure to gain the majority and became known as the *Bolsheviks*, the Russian word for majority. The other group was called the *Mensheviks*, which means minority.

The Bolsheviks began to organize following the way Lenin had outlined, through such methods as assassinations, confiscation of government money, and robbing official institutions. After many years of banishment, the Bolsheviks began their Russian Revolution of 1917. Actually, that year saw two separate revolutions. The first came in February; when Tsar Nicholas II was removed from the throne and imprisoned with his family, and a democratic government was established. But the Bolsheviks didn't want democracy; they were determined to establish a dictatorship of the proletariat.

In October 1917, their awaited revolution took place. Communist militants led by Lenin and Trotsky, his chief assistant, seized first the former capital, Petrograd ("Peter City," named for Peter the Great), and then Moscow. Battles in these two cities established the world's first Communist regime.

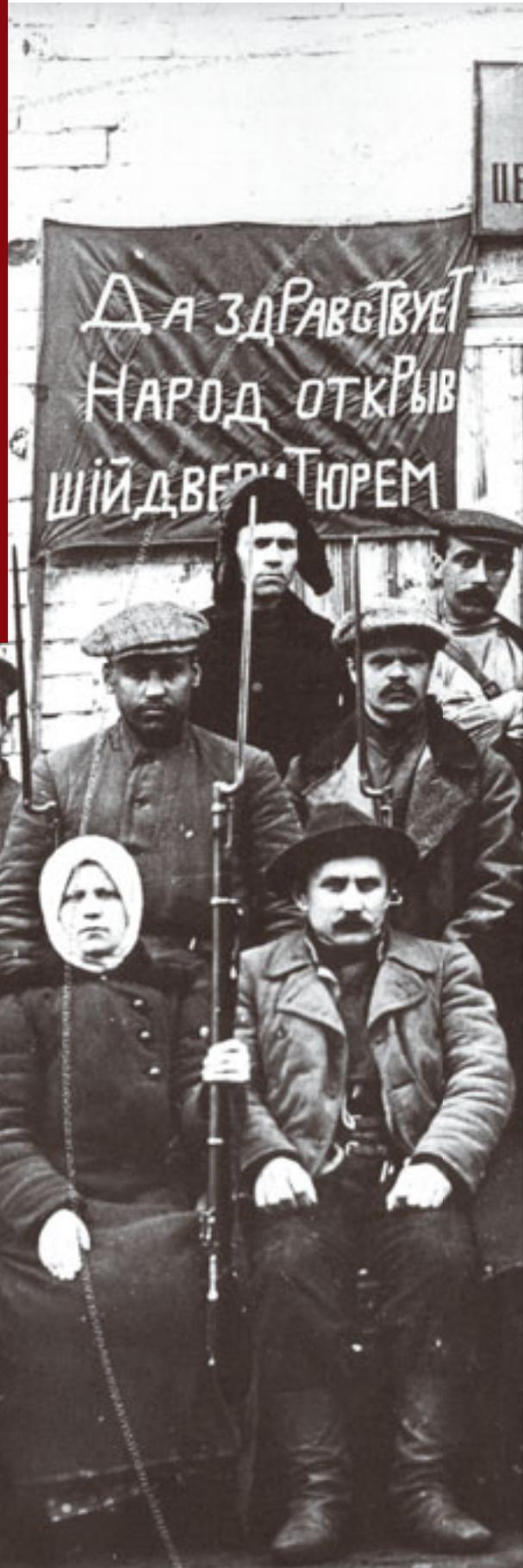
After the October Revolution, Russia was swept by a three-year civil war between the so-called White Army, assembled by Tsarist generals, and the Red Army led by Trotsky. In July of 1918, Lenin ordered Bolshevik militants to execute Tsar Nicholas II and his family, including his three children. In the course of the civil war, the Bolsheviks did not hesitate to commit the bloodiest crimes, murders, and tortures against their opponents.

Both the Red Army and the Cheka, a secret police organization founded by Lenin, inflicted terror on all parts of society opposed to the revolution. A book entitled *The Black Book of Communism* written by a group of scholars and published by the Harvard University Press, describing Communist atrocities throughout the world, has this to say about Bolshevik terror:

The Bolsheviks had decided to eliminate, by legal and physical means, any challenge or resistance, even if passive, to their absolute power. This strategy applied not only to groups with opposing political views, but also to such social groups as the nobility, the middle class, the intelligentsia, and

IGNORANT MILITANTS OF COMMUNISM

The Bolsheviks addressed the ignorant masses with basic slogans, adding many people to their ranks in a short time through intense propaganda. The poor and uneducated were easily persuaded to believe the lies of Communists who promised them bread and a comfortable life. The atheism fostered by Darwinism hardened Communist propaganda. This picture shows a group of Russian workers and peasants who became Communists within a few days, as a result of this propaganda.



КОНТОРА
ЦЕНТРАЛЬНОГО СКЛАДА

Др. Завод
Земля и свобода





Leon Trotsky, military leader of the Bolshevik Revolution and the second most important man after Lenin. As leader of the Red Army, he led all of Russia into a bloody civil war. At the top, we see a view of the tens of thousands of innocents killed in the civil war.



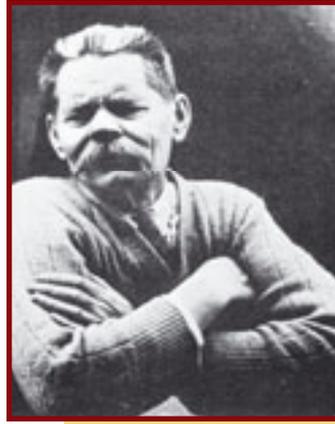
A propaganda poster showing Trotsky as a war hero.



Russian soldiers supporting an uprising instigated by Trotsky against the Tsar in St. Petersburg, 1917.



the clergy, as well as professional groups such as military officers and the police. **Sometimes the Bolsheviks subjected these people to genocide.** The policy of "**de-Cossackization**" begun in 1920 corresponds largely to our definition of genocide: a population group firmly established in a particular terri-



Maxim Gorky

tory, **the Cossacks as such were exterminated, the men shot, the women, children and the elderly deported, and the villages razed or handed over to new, non-Cossack occupants.** Lenin compared the Cossacks to the Vendée during the French Revolution and gladly subjected them to a program of what Gracchus Babeuf, the "inventor" of modern Communism, characterized in 1795 as "**populicide.**"²³

In every city they entered, the Bolsheviks killed those not open to their ideology and committed acts of excessive savagery intended to instill fear. *The Black Book of Communism* describes the Bolshevik atrocities in Crimea:

Similar acts of violence occurred in most of the cities of the Crimea occupied by the Bolsheviks, including Sevastopol, Yalta, Alushta, and Simferopol. Similar atrocities are recorded from April and May 1918 in the big Cossack cities then in revolt. The extremely precise file of the Denikin commission record "**corpses with hands cut off, broken bones, heads ripped off, broken jaws, and genital removed.**"²⁴

The Russian historian and socialist S.P. Melgunov, in his book *The Red Terror in Russia*, says that Sevastopol was turned into a "**city of the hanged**" because of the extermination campaign against surviving witnesses:

From Nakhimovskiy, all one could see was the hanging bodies of officers, soldiers, and civilians arrested in the streets. The town was dead, and the only people left alive were hiding in lofts or basements. All the walls, shop fronts, and telegraph poles were covered with posters calling for "**Death to the traitors.**" They were hanging people for fun.²⁵

The Bolsheviks sorted the people they wanted to eliminate into certain categories. For example, the bourgeoisie (or the "Mensheviks," who

understood socialism differently from the Bolsheviks) were the new regime's chief enemies. The "**kulak**," the most numerous category, was specially targeted. In Russian, a kulak is the name given to a rich landowner. During the revolution and the civil war, Lenin issued hundreds of orders that rained pitiless terror on the kulaks. For example, **in one telegram to the Central Executive Committee of Penza soviet, he said:**

Comrades! The kulak uprising in your five districts must be crushed without pity. The interests of the whole revolution demand such actions, for **the final struggle with the kulaks has now begun.** You must make an example of these people. **Hang (I mean hang publicly, so that people see it) at least 100 kulaks, rich bastards, and known blood-suckers.** Publish their names. Seize all their grain...**Do all this so that for miles around people see it all, understand it, tremble...**Reply saying you have received and carried out these instructions. Yours, Lenin. ²⁶

Lenin gave many orders like this one. Bolshevik militants gladly carried out his instructions, even inventing their own styles of savagery. The famous author Maxim Gorky witnessed some of these methods and later wrote:

In Tambov province Communists were nailed with railway spikes by their left hand and left foot to trees a metre above the soil, and they watched the torments of these deliberately oddly-crucified people. They would open a prisoner's belly, take out the small intestine and nailing it to a tree or telegraph pole they drove the man around the tree with blows, watching the intestine unwind through the wound. Stripping a captured officer naked, they tore strips of skin from his shoulders in the form of shoulder straps... ²⁷

The Bolsheviks undertook to exterminate those who did not want to adopt Communism. Tens of thousands were executed without a trial. Many opponents of the regime were sent to concentration camps, collectively called the "Gulag," where prisoners were worked almost to death under very harsh conditions. Many never left these camps alive. In the period from 1918 to 1922, they murdered hundreds of thousands of workers and villagers who had opposed the regime.

In the "*Novaia Zhizn*" newspaper published on July 14th, 1918, one of the communist leaders of the time, Felix Dzerzhinsky, stated as follows how terrorism was a *sine qua non* of the communist revolution:

“We stand for organized terror - this should be frankly admitted. Terror is an absolute necessity during times of revolution.”

Lenin argued how individual terrorism, which will initially prove effective, must in time give way to mass terrorism, in other words systematic violence, armed massacres and civil war as follows:

And so matters are moving ahead! Despite the incredible and utterly indescribable difficulties, headway is being made in the matter of getting armed. Individual terrorism, bred of intellectualist impotence, is gradually becoming a thing of the past. Instead of spending tens of thousands of rubles and a vast amount of revolutionary energy on the assassination of some Sergei ..., on assassinations “in the name of the people”—*military operations together with the people* are now commencing. It is by engaging in such operations that the pioneers of **armed struggle** become fused with the masses not merely in word but in deed, assume leadership of the combat squads and contingents of the proletariat, **train in the crucible of civil war dozens of popular leaders** who, tomorrow, on the day of the workers’ uprising, will be able to help with their experience and their heroic courage thousands and tens of thousands of workers. ...

... it is only necessary to begin extensive propaganda of this idea immediately, form such contingents, supply them with **all sorts of weapons, ranging from knives and revolvers to bombs**, and give these contingents military training and education.

Fortunately, the time has passed when revolution was “made” by individual revolutionary terrorists, because the people were not revolutionary. **The bomb has ceased to be the weapon of the solitary “bomb thrower”, and is becoming an essential weapon of the people.** ²⁸

The Harvard historian Richard Pipes investigated secret Soviet archives to research his book, *The Unknown Lenin*. Revealing that Lenin gave countless orders to have people tortured and murdered, he ends his book with this evaluation:

With the evidence currently available it becomes difficult to deny that **Lenin was, not an idealist, but a mass murderer, a man who believed that the best way to solve problems—no matter whether real or imaginary—was to kill off the people who caused them.** It is he who originated the practice of political and social extermination that in the twentieth century would claim tens of millions of lives. ²⁹

The following lines featured in the 1 September 1918 edition of the Bolshevik newspaper, "*Krasnaya Gazeta*" reveals in quite plain terms the bloodthirsty, ruthless and sick mentality behind the communist atrocities and massacres carried out under Lenin's leadership, various examples of which have been given above:

We will turn our hearts into steel, which we will temper in the fire of suffering and the blood of fighters for freedom. We will make our hearts cruel, hard, and immovable, so that no mercy will enter them, and so that **they will not quiver at the sight of a sea of enemy blood**. We will let loose the floodgates of that sea. Without mercy, without sparing, we will kill our enemies in scores of hundreds. Let them be thousands; let them drown themselves in their own blood. For the blood of Lenin and Uritsky, Zinovief and Volodarski, let there be floods of the blood of the bourgeois - more blood, as much as possible.

One of the ardent followers of Lenin, Ernesto "Che" Guevara's following words are also meaningful in the sense that they reflect the darkness of the savage communist spirit:

Hatred as an element of the struggle; a relentless hatred of the enemy, impelling us over and beyond the natural limitations that man is heir to and **transforming him into an effective, violent, selective and cold killing machine. Our soldiers must be thus ...** ³⁰

Pavlov's Dogs and Lenin's Plans for Human Evolution

It's important to understand the reason behind Lenin's violence and that underlay further examples of Communist tragedies. Why did Lenin and other Communist leaders we'll examine later—Stalin, Mao, and Pol Pot—become crazed murderers?

The reason is the materialist philosophy they held, and its view of human beings. As we saw at the beginning, Communism is basically materialist philosophy applied to history, in total harmony with Darwin's theory of evolution—which, in turn, is the adaptation of materialist philosophy to the natural world. Some basic elements of this perverse philosophy can be outlined as follows:

1. A human being is composed only of matter, with no spirit or soul.

2. A human is a highly evolved species of animal. Essentially, there is no difference between human beings and animals. The only difference between a human being and other animals is that his environment has tamed him.

3. In nature and in human society, the only unchanging law is the one of conflict. Conflicting interests result in struggle. At the end of any struggle, it is natural—even necessary—that one side lose, suffer and die.

4. Therefore, from the Communist point of view, for any development to take place—for example, for the "revolution" to succeed—it's inevitable, even necessary, that many people will suffer, be subjected to torture, and die.

5. To legitimize these convictions, Communism—and every other ideology that adopts a materialist philosophy—resorts to destroying a society's faith in God. Actually, the aim of materialism is to alienate society from its belief in God and in religious and moral values, and bring into being a mass of human beings who consider themselves an assortment of soulless animals. In this way, these ideologues believe that they can control the masses, establish their own power, and

prepare a legitimate foundation for any immorality or cruelty they wish to commit.

Given that Communism regards human being in this way, it follows that its major efforts have been towards "bestializing" them—beating them like wild animals, "training" them by instilling fear and inflicting pain and, when necessary, cutting their throats.

Very clearly, Lenin accepted this materialist-Darwinist philosophy that regards human beings as animals. After speaking privately with Ivan Petrovich Pavlov, the Russian scientist famous for his experiments on the conditioned reflexes of animals,



Ivan Pavlov, known for his conditioned reflex experiments performed on animals.



TRIGGERING CONDITIONED REFLEXES

Trotsky gives a propaganda speech
to a mass crowd in Red Square in
1918.

Lenin and Trotsky believed they
could train human beings like ani-
mals, using methods of evoking a
conditioned response. The Soviet
Union organized the Communist
Party according to this logic.



Lenin tried applying Pavlov's methods to Russian society. In his book, *A People's Tragedy: A History of the Russian Revolution*, Orlando Figes writes about Lenin's desire to "educate" the Russian people as an animal trainer would, and how the roots of this ambition lie in Darwinism:

In October 1919, according to legend, Lenin paid a secret visit to the laboratory of the great physiologist I. P. Pavlov to find out if his work on the conditional reflexes of the brain might help the Bolsheviks control human behaviour. 'I want the masses of Russia to follow a Communistic pattern of thinking and reacting,' Lenin explained... **Pavlov was astounded. It seemed that Lenin wanted him to do for humans what he had already done for dogs.** 'Do you mean that you would like to standardize the population of Russia? Make them all behave in the same way?' he asked. 'Exactly' replied Lenin. **'Man can be corrected. Man can be made what we want him to be.'**... **[T]he ultimate aim of the Communist system was the transformation of human nature.** It was an aim shared by the other so-called totalitarian regimes of the inter-war period...As one of the pioneers of the eugenics movement in Nazi Germany put in 1920, 'it could almost seem as if we have witnessed a change in the concept of humanity...We were forced by the terrible exigencies of war to ascribe a different value to the life of the individual than was the case before.'

...The notion of creating a new type of man through the enlightenment of the masses had always been the messianic mission of the nineteenth-century Russian intelligentsia, from whom the Bolsheviks emerged. Marxist philosophy likewise taught that human nature was a product of historical development and could thus be transformed by a revolution. **The scientific materialism of Darwin and Huxley, which had the status of a religion among the Russian intelligentsia during Lenin's youth, equally lent itself to the view that man was determined by the world in which he lived.** Thus the Bolsheviks were led to conclude that their revolution, with the help of science, could create a new type of man...

...Although Pavlov was an outspoken critic of the revolution and had often threatened to emigrate, he was patronized by the Bolsheviks. After two years of growing his own carrots, Pavlov was awarded a handsome ration and a spacious Moscow apartment... Lenin spoke of Pavlov's work as

'hugely significant' for the revolution. Bukharin called it 'a weapon from the iron arsenal of materialism.'³¹

Trotsky, an important theoretician of Communist ideology and Lenin's most important associate, agreed with Lenin's views about "the transformation of human nature" that had their origin in Darwinism. As Trotsky wrote:

What is man? He is by no means a finished or harmonious being. No, he is still a highly awkward creature. Man, as an animal, has not evolved by plan but spontaneously, and has accumulated many contradictions. The question of how to educate and regulate, of how to improve and complete the physical and spiritual construction of man, is a colossal problem which can only be conceived on the basis of Socialism. We can construct a railway across the Sahara, we can build the Eiffel Tower and talk directly with New York, but we surely cannot improve man. No, we can! To produce a new, 'improved version' of man — that is the future task of Communism... **Man must look at himself and see himself as a raw material, or at best as a semi-manufactured product,** and say: 'At last, my dear *homo sapiens*, I will work on you.'³²

Along with Lenin and Trotsky, other Bolsheviks believed that human beings were an animal species, nothing more than an agglomeration of matter. Because they saw no value in human life, millions of persons could easily be sacrificed for the sake of the revolution. According to Richard Pipes's *The Unknown Lenin*, "**For humankind at large Lenin had nothing but scorn: the documents confirm Gorky's assertion that individual human beings held for Lenin 'almost no interest,' and that he treated the working class much as a metalworker treated iron ore.**"³³

Lenin's Policy of Deliberate Starvation

Nearly all Communist regimes of the 20th century have subjected their peoples to starvation. In Lenin's time, famine brought death to five million. From 1932 to 1933, in Stalin's time, the same disaster happened again but with a much wider scope; more than 6 million people died as a result of it. As we will see in the following pages, millions died as a result of famine in Mao's Red China and Pol Pot's Cambodia.

Today, with supermarkets, bakeries, pastry shops, and restaurants all around us; famine seems an alien concept. When we do hear about famine, most often we think of it as a period of temporary hunger. But the famines in Russia, China and Cambodia was a prolonged condition that lasted for months, even years. Apart from grain and rice that villagers could grow to feed themselves, all produce was snatched from their hands, leaving them nothing else to eat. People ate all the vegetables and fruit that they used to collect for sale, and all the animals they could slaughter. When this supply quickly ran out, they would resort to boiling leaves, grass and tree bark. After several weeks of continual hunger, their bodies would grow weak and become emaciated. Some would eat stray cats and dogs and other wild creatures, including insects. Soon, wracked with pain, people would start to die, one after another, with no one to bury them. Finally would appear famine's worst aspect of all: cannibalism. People would start to eat corpses first, then attack each other, snatching children to slaughter and devour. In line with Communist philosophy, they would become bestialized indeed, and human no longer.

This was the goal of the Communist regime. Unbelievable as it might seem, it happened first in the 20th century, in Bolshevik Russia under Lenin's leadership.

In 1918, shortly after the Bolsheviks came to power, Lenin decided to abolish private property. His decision's most important result was the nationalization of land once owned by villagers. Bolshevik militants, Cheka police agents, and Red Army units forced their way into farms all over Russia and, under threat of arms, confiscated the produce that was the only source of food for villagers already living in harsh conditions. A quota was established that every farmer had to give to the Bolsheviks, but in order to fill it, most farmers had to surrender all the produce they had. Villagers who resisted were silenced by the most brutal methods.

In order to have not all their wheat seized, some farmers hid a portion in storage. The Bolsheviks regarded this kind of behavior as a "betrayal of the revolution" and punished it with outrageous savagery. On February 14, 1922, an inspector went to the region of Omsk and described what happened there:



As a result of his commitment of Darwinism, Lenin regarded human beings as a herd of animals and he did not hesitate to use the cruelest methods against them.

Abuses of position by the requisitioning detachments, frankly speaking, have now reached unbelievable levels. **Systematically, the peasants who are arrested are all locked up in big unheated barns; they are then whipped and threatened with execution.** Those who have not filled the whole of their quota are bound and forced to run naked all along the main street of the village and then locked up in another unheated hangar. **A great number of women have been beaten until they are unconscious and then thrown naked into holes dug in the snow...** ³⁴



CANNIBALS CAUGHT EATING A KIDNAPPED CHILD

In the course of the famine that Lenin regarded as "beneficial," cases of cannibalism were discovered. This photograph, taken in a Russian village in the Volga region in 1921, shows two adults eating children they had kidnapped and butchered. This scene of savagery is evidence of the model Communism seeks to establish.



In 1921 and 1922, as a result of the famine deliberately caused by Lenin, 29 million people within the borders of the Soviet Union were caught in the grips of starvation. Five million of them starved to death.

Lenin became enraged when he saw that quotas set for the villagers were not being met. Finally in 1920, he imposed a terrible punishment on the villagers in some areas who were resisting the confiscations: These villagers would have not only their produce taken, but their seeds as well. This meant they couldn't plant new crops and would certainly die of hunger. From 1921 to 1922, famine caught 29 million Russian individuals in its grip; and five million of them died.

When news of the famine reached Western countries, they organized an aid campaign to help ease the disaster. It almost succeeded, but it came too late. The Bolsheviks, wanting to conceal the utter disaster of their agricultural policy, forbade the publication of any news about the famine, consistently denying that it was happening. In his book, *A Concise History of the Russian Revolution*, Richard Pipes writes:

In the spring of 1921, **peasants in the areas struck by the famine resorted to eating grass, tree bark, and rodents...** There were confirmed cases of canni-

WHILE

THE PEASANTS



The famine at the beginning of the 1920's resulted from the Bolsheviks confiscating the peasants' crops. Millions of people, including hundreds of thousands of children, died in the famine. Lenin told his comrades this famine was very beneficial, because "it would destroy faith in God".



WERE DYING

OF HUNGER...



Children became just skin and bone and died of starvation, but the Bolsheviks continued to confiscate the peasants' grain. Sacks that peasants hid underground were found and dragged out of their holes by Communist militants. Villagers who had hidden the sacks were tortured to death.



In the Kurgan region in 1918, bags of wheat were forcibly collected from the people to feed the Red Army.

balism. Soon millions of wretched human beings abandoned their villages and headed for the nearest railroad station hoping to make their way to regions where, rumor had it, there was food. They clogged the railway depots, for they were refused transportation, because **until July 1921 Moscow persisted in denying that a catastrophe had occurred.** Here, in the words of a contemporary, they waited "for trains which never came, or for death, which was inevitable." Visitors to the stricken areas passed village after village with no sign of life, the inhabitants having either departed or lying prostrate in their cottages, too weak to move. In the cities, corpses littered the streets... ³⁵

What was the aim of this policy? Lenin wanted to strengthen the Bolshevik regime's economy by seizing villagers' produce and realize the Communist dream of abolishing private property. But in deliberately subjecting his fellow Russians to famine, Lenin also had another purpose: Hunger, he knew, would have a devastating effect on their morale and psychology. He wanted to use famine as a tool to destroy people's faith in God and instigate a movement against the church. *The Black Book of Communism* describes Lenin's state of mind:

A young lawyer called Vladimir Ilych Ulyanov was then living in Samara, the regional capital of one of the areas worst affected by the famine. He

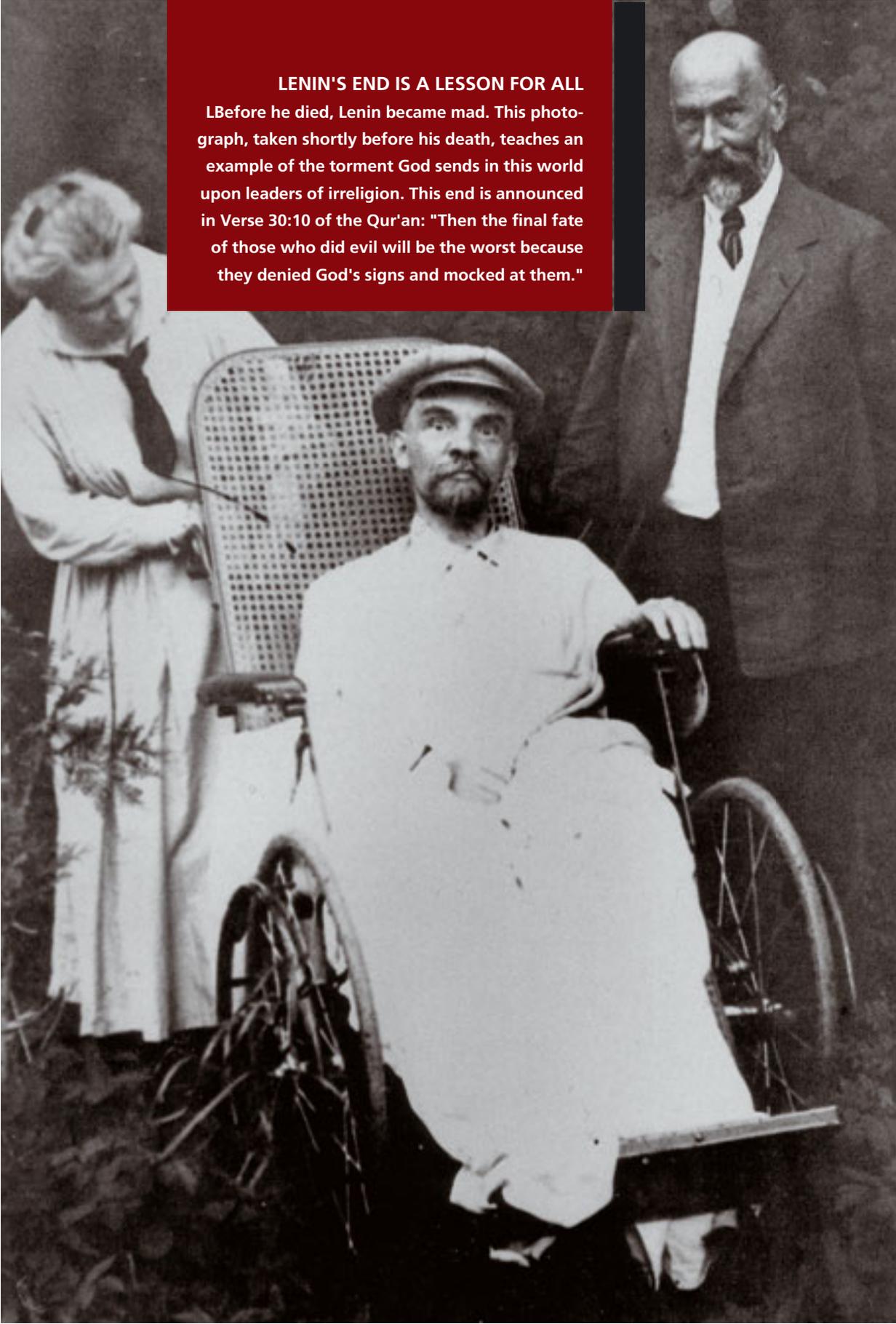
was the only member of the local intelligentsia who not only refused to participate in the aid for the hungry, but publicly opposed it. As one of his friends later recalled, "**Vladimir Ilych Ulyanov had the courage to come out and say openly that famine would have numerous positive results,** particularly in the appearance of a new industrial proletariat, which would take over from the bourgeoisie... **Famine, he explained, in destroying the outdated peasant economy, would bring about the next stage more rapidly, and usher in socialism, the stage that necessarily followed capitalism. Famine would also destroy faith not only in the tsar, but in God too.**"



A photograph of Lenin, shortly before his death.

LENIN'S END IS A LESSON FOR ALL

Before he died, Lenin became mad. This photograph, taken shortly before his death, teaches an example of the torment God sends in this world upon leaders of irreligion. This end is announced in Verse 30:10 of the Qur'an: "Then the final fate of those who did evil will be the worst because they denied God's signs and mocked at them."





Lenin's body was mummified like an Egyptian pharaoh's and placed in a tomb reminiscent of a Greek temple.

Thirty years later, when the "young lawyer" had become the head of the Bolshevik government, his ideas remained unchanged: **Famine could and should "strike a mortal blow against the enemy." The enemy in question was the Orthodox Church.**³⁶

A letter Lenin sent to members of the Politburo on March 19, 1922, shows he wanted to use hunger as a method to break the bond between religion and the masses, to numb their reactions and thus facilitate his planned assault against religious institutions:

In fact the present moment favors us far more than it does them. We are almost 99 percent sure that we can strike a mortal blow against them [our enemies] and consolidate the central position that we are going to need to occupy for several decades to come. With the help of **all those starving people who are starting to eat each other, who are dying by the millions, and whose bodies litter the roadside all over the country, it is now and only now that we can—and therefore must—confiscate all church property with all the ruthless energy we can still muster...** All evidence suggests that we could not do this at any other moment, because our only hope is the despair engendered in the masses by the famine, which will cause them to look at us in a favorable light or, at the very least, with indifference.³⁷

Lenin's cruel methods are the first instance of Communist savagery. Stalin and Mao, the dictators who came after him, only increased the scope of the horror.

Lenin's own death is quite telling. He suffered his first stroke in May 1922. On December 16, 1922, he suffered another major attack. Half paralyzed, he was confined to bed. In March of 1923, his illness worsened significantly and he lost the ability to speak. Afflicted by terrible headaches, he spent most of 1923 in a wheelchair. In the final months of his life, those who saw him were horrified at the frightful, half-mad expression on his face. He died of a brain hemorrhage on January 21, 1924.

The Bolsheviks mummified Lenin's body and specially preserved his brain, which they considered to have great value. They placed his body in a tomb, built in the style of a Greek temple, in Moscow's Red Square, where it was visited by crowds of people. Lines of visitors would look at the corpse in dread.

Their dread was to increase in years to come. Joseph Stalin, Lenin's successor, was even more cruel and sadistic. In a short time, he established the greatest "reign of terror" in modern history.

How Did Stalin Become a Communist?

Iosif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili was born in 1879, in a poor family in Gori, a small town near Tbilisi in Georgia. He began to use the name of Stalin, which means "man of steel" in Russian, after 1913.

His mother was a religious woman. She used all her strength to rear her son to be a priest, so she enrolled him in a church school in Gori. He graduated after five years there, and entered the seminary in Tblisi to begin his studies to become a priest of the Georgian Orthodox Church.

During this period, however, Stalin read a few books that changed his world view. Up to then, he had been the devout son of a religious mother, but he lost his faith in God and religion and became an atheist after reading Darwin's *The Origin of Species*.

In his book, *Stalin and the Shaping of the Soviet Union*, the Oxford University historian Alex de Jonge shows Darwin's vital role in shaping Stalin's youthful outlook. According to Jonge, **he was "a theological stu-**



Stalin was brought up to be a priest, but at a young age was drawn into atheism by some books he read, the most influential of which was Darwin's *Origin of Species*.

dent who had lost his faith; Stalin would always maintain that it was Darwin who was responsible for that loss."³⁸ Stalin's adoption of Marxism happened not long afterward. Jonge states that Stalin often emphasized this point in his private conversations.

In his book *Hitler and Stalin: Parallel Lives*, the English historian Alan Bullock compares these two men, saying that, in his youth, Stalin was very influenced by the works of Karl Marx and Auguste Comte, which he read in Russian translations.³⁹

Actually, this deception happened not only to Stalin, but to the majority of a generation of Russian students and other young people. The myths in scientific garb proposed by Darwin, Huxley, and Lamarck led many young Russians to become atheists. In *A People's Tragedy, A history of the Russian Revolution*, historian Orlando Figes says, "**The scientific materialism of Darwin and Huxley . . . had the status of a religion among the Russian intelligentsia during Lenin's youth.**"⁴⁰ Figes relates how Semen Kanatchikov, a young worker who later joined the

Actually, this deception happened not only to Stalin, but to the



After Stalin had joined the ranks of the Communists, he was arrested several times under the Tsar's regime. At left, a series of photographs of one of those arrests.

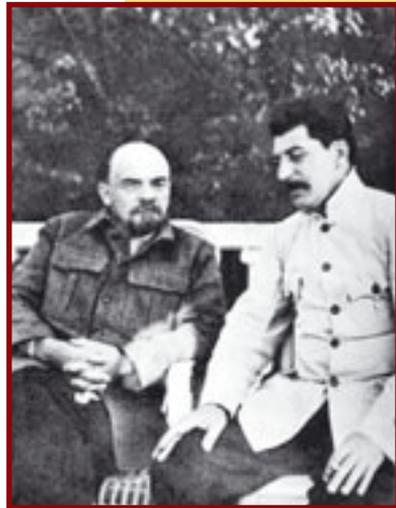
Bolsheviks, abandoned his religion as the result of evolutionist propaganda:

One young worker "proved" to him that God had not created man by showing that, if one filled a box with earth and kept it warm, worms and insects would eventually appear in it. This sort of vulgarized pre-Darwinian science, which was widely found in the left-wing pamphlets of that time, had a tremendous impact on young workers like Kanatchikov...

"Now my emancipation from my old prejudices moved forward at an accelerated tempo," later he wrote. "I stopped going to the priest for confession, no longer attended church, and began to eat 'forbidden' food."

Such examples as the one quoted above, used to support the claim that God did not create life (surely God is beyond that claim) and that everything came to be by chance, were sheer bogus. Worms and insects did not arise by happenstance—out of nothing, as the medieval belief in spontaneous generation had it—but from eggs laid in the ground. But because the scientific world was not yet aware that living creatures could never be generated from lifeless matter, such myths as these arose like a flood, drowning the half-ignorant Russian youth in atheism.

Members of the atheist generation that grew up in Russia in the 19th century, emerged in the 20th century as passionate Communists. One of them was Stalin. In 1898 he joined a secret Communist organization and began to write for a Communist magazine, *Brdzola* (The Struggle), in 1901. By 1917, he was an active militant of the Communist movement led by Lenin. After the October Revolution of 1917, he became one of the five members of the Politburo, the highest degree of



Stalin became close to Lenin in his latter days and tried to advance within the party. Upon Lenin's death, Stalin overcame his rivals and became the Soviet Union's sole ruler.

membership in the Communist Party. While Lenin lay ill in 1923, Stalin's power continued in the party to grow and upon Lenin's death, he became the supreme authority. In the five years between 1924 and 1929, he cleared the party of all his opponents by assassination, execution, or exile. Even Trotsky, one of the architects of the October Revolution, became the object of his rage and was driven out of the Soviet Union.

After consolidating his power, Stalin turned his iron fist on society. Lenin had tried to nationalize all the agricultural land in Russia, but the devastation caused by the great famine of 1920-1921 forced him to postpone this undertaking. Stalin, determined to put his plan into effect, began to apply a policy called "collectivization." Its aim was to nationalize all of the villagers' property, seize and export their crops, and use the revenue to bolster Soviet industry and strengthen the military.

Stalin carried out his collectivization policy by torture, murder and starvation. Six million people died of famine, while he exported hundreds of thousands of tons of grain. Once again, Stalin documented the savagery of Materialist-Darwinist ideas, which regarded humanity as an animal species that had to be trained by inflicting pain as corrective punishment.

The Savagery of Collectivization

This policy of Stalin's began in 1929. According to his plan, all private property was to be abolished. Every villager would have to give to the state a certain quota of his production and was prohibited from selling his own produce. The villagers' quotas were very high and to meet it, most had to surrender everything they had. The tyranny Lenin had begun in the 1920's resumed once more.

To implement collectivization, Stalin employed the cruelest methods. Those who resisted were killed, exiled to Siberia (essentially, murder over the long term) or left to starve (slow murder). Throughout the whole country, kulaks (rich landowners) who resisted collectivization—and, therefore, Communism in general—were hunted down. *The Black Book of Communism* describes this policy:

The kulaks who resisted collectivization were shot, and the others were



Peasants in Ukraine in 1929 listening to collectivization propaganda. Collectivization was presented as a way to increase agricultural yield, but its implementation caused a terrible famine.

deported with their wives, children and elderly family members. Although not all kulaks were exterminated directly, sentences of forced labor in wilderness areas of Siberia or the far north left them with scant chance of survival. Several tens of thousands perished there; the exact number of victims remains unknown. As for the great famine in Ukraine in 1932-33, which resulted from the rural population's resistance to forced collectivization, 6 million died in a period of several months.⁴²

The savagery inflicted on the kulaks included the most horrendous tortures. In a letter to Stalin in April 1933, the writer Mikhail Sholokhov wrote:

In the Napolovski *kolkhoz* [a collective farm in the Soviet Union] a certain Plotkin, plenipotentiary for the district committee, forced the collective workers to stretch out on stoves heated till they were white hot; then he cooled them off by leaving them naked in a hangar.⁴³

Stalin's regime, like Lenin's before it, created imaginary enemies they called "kulaks." They targeted anyone they wanted to eliminate by stamping them with this name. It was easy for the Communists to categorize those they didn't like as "kulaks" and to send orders to every city,

commanding that a certain number of these "kulaks" be rounded and executed. This is described in *The Black Book of Communism*:

In such conditions, it is not surprising that in certain districts between 80 and 90 percent of those victimized by the dekulakization process were *serednyaki*, or **middle-income peasants. The brigades had to meet the required quotas and, if possible, surpass them.** Peasants were arrested and deported for having sold grain on the market or for having had an employee to help with the harvest back in 1925 or 1926, for possessing two samovars, for having killed a pig in September 1929 "with the intention of consuming it themselves and thus keeping it from socialist appropriation." Peasants were arrested on the pretext that they had "taken part in commerce," when all they had done was sell something of their own making. One peasant was deported on the pretext that his uncle had been a tsarist officer; another was labeled a kulak on account of his "excessive visits to the church." But most often, people were classed as kulaks simply on the grounds that they had resisted collectivization. At times confusion reigned in the dekulakization brigades to an almost comic extreme: in one city in Ukraine, for example, a *serednyak* who was a member of a dekulakization brigade was himself arrested by a member of another brigade that was operating on the other side of the town.

At the top of the list of those branded as kulaks were the clergy. In 1930, more than 13,000 priests were "dekulakized." **In many villages and towns**, collectivization began symbolically with the closing of the church and the removal of local religious leaders.⁴⁵

Collectivization had two major results: famine and exile.

Famine Brought About by Stalin

Like Lenin before him, Stalin intended to wield collectivization as a weapon against society. By collecting as much grain as he wanted from any section of the country, he subjected any people in those areas to starvation. Because Ukraine resisted Communism, it became the target of collectivization. This region suffered the greatest man-made famine in history, with a total of four million dying of starvation.

How this occurred is significant. First, according to the state's gen-



eral collectivization policy in 1931, a total of 7.7 million tons of grain was demanded from a Ukrainian harvest which collectivization had brought down to 18 million tons. This brought the already overburdened villagers almost to the point of starvation and the villagers of Ukraine began to resist Stalin's troops—which made Stalin even more pitiless. In July of 1932, he issued a virtual death order against the whole of the Ukraine by increasing the previous quota demanding another 7.7 million tons of grain to be delivered to the State. Millions of people were condemned to die of starvation. This policy is described in Brian Moynahan's book, *The Russian Century: A Photographic History of Russia's 100 Years*:

Requisitioning gangs of Communist activists, armed with steel rods up to ten feet long, swarmed over the Ukraine. 'They searched in the house, in the attic, shed and cellar,' a victim recalled. 'Then they went outside and searched in the barn, pig pen, granary, and straw pile...' Crude watchtowers were put up in the fields, posts with a hut of wood and straw atop them. Here guards armed with shotguns would look out for snipers; those

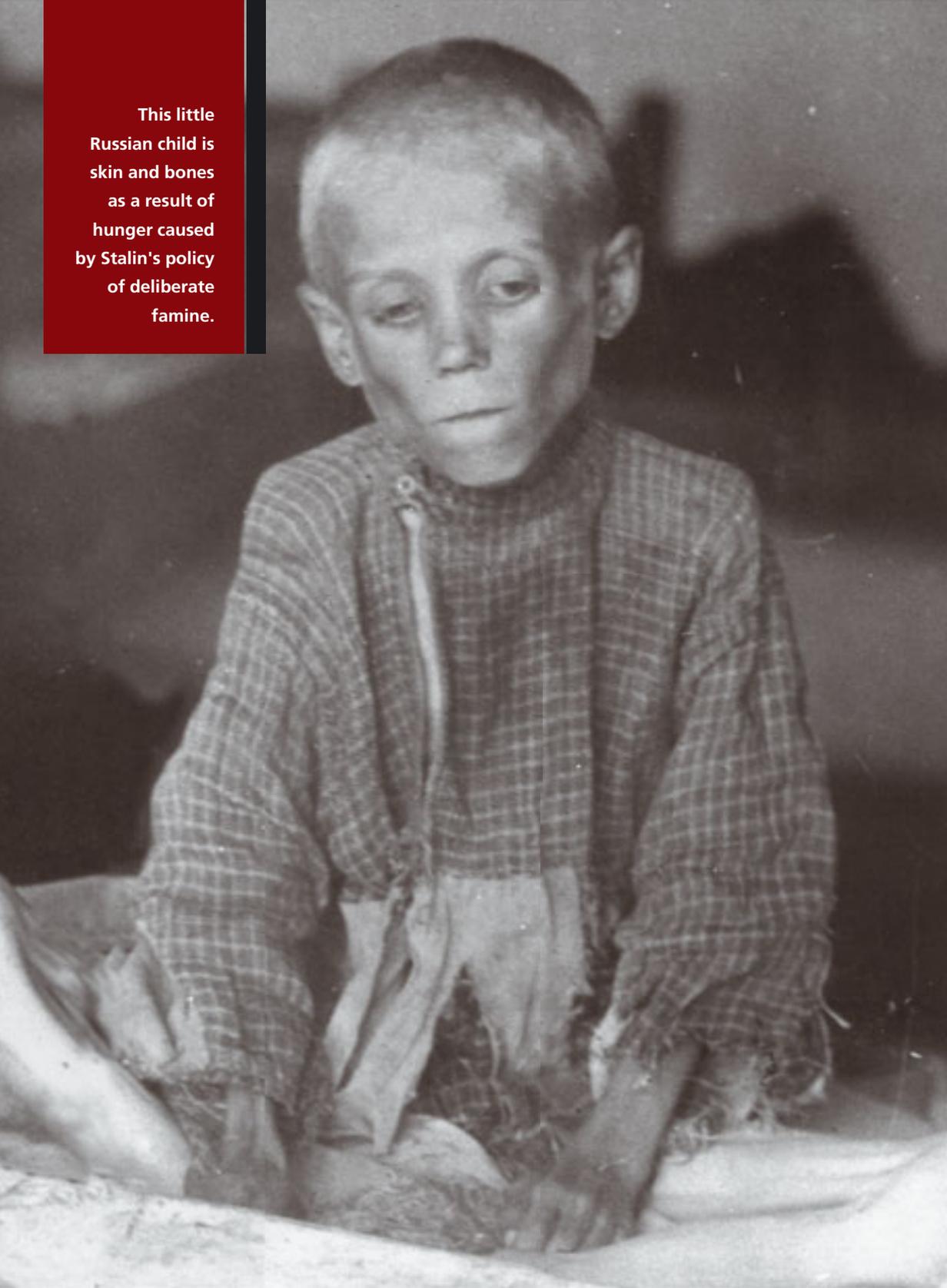
who were driven by hunger to cut off ears of corn with scissors. Those who were caught got a minimum of ten years under the Law of Seven-eighths; some were shot. One Kharkov court issued fifteen hundred death sentences in a month; **a woman was given a ten-year sentence for cutting 100 ears of corn from her own plot, two weeks after her husband had died of starvation.** The remaining chickens and pigs were eaten in the early winter of 1932. Then the dogs and cats went. 'It was hard to catch them,' wrote Vasily Grossman. 'The animals had become afraid of people and their eyes were wild. People boiled them...' ... Only 4.7 million tons of grain had been delivered by the end of 1932. A new levy was announced. ...Meteorologists were arrested for issuing false weather forecasts to damage the harvest. Veterinarians were shot for sabotaging livestock. Agronomists were accused of being kulaks and deported to Siberia...

Mass starvation started when the snow melted in March 1933. People ate rats, ants, and earthworms. They made soup with dandelions and nettles. *The New York Evening Journal* correspondent visited a village twenty miles from Kiev. 'In one hut they were cooking a mess that defied analysis,' he wrote. 'There were bones, pigweed, skin, and what looked like a boot top in the pot.'...

People abandoned their villages. They squatted along rail tracks begging for crusts to be thrown from carriage windows, and inundated railroad stations. They followed troops on maneuvers. They crawled about on all fours in towns. Carts went through the streets of Kiev each morning collecting the corpses of those who had died in the night. The children had thin, elongated faces like dead birds...

Still the activists searched for grain; shot mothers who they found digging up potatoes; beat those who were not swollen up in the tell-tale sign of starvation to make them reveal their source of food. 'We were realising Historical Necessity,' wrote the activist Lev Kopolev. 'We were performing our revolutionary duty. We were obtaining grain for the socialist fatherland... I saw women and children with distended bellies, turning blue, with vacant, lifeless eyes. And corpses—corpses in ragged sheepskin coats and cheap felt boots; corpses in peasant huts, in the melting snow of old Vologda, under the bridges of Kharkov...'

This little Russian child is skin and bones as a result of hunger caused by Stalin's policy of deliberate famine.



...Word of the famine reached the West... An international relief committee was set up under the archbishop of Vienna. It could do nothing, however, for the Soviet government denied that any famine was taking place.⁴⁶

These savage scenes affected the Russian author Michail Sholokhov, who wrote a letter to Stalin demanding an end to this cruelty. But Stalin had done all these things deliberately, of course:

In April 1933 the writer Mikhail Sholokhov, who was passing through the city of Kuban, wrote two letters to Stalin detailing the manner in which the **local authorities had tortured all the workers on the collective farm to force them to hand over all their remaining supplies.** He demanded that the first secretary send some sort of food aid...

In his reply on 6 May, Stalin made no attempt to feign compassion...In 1933, while these millions were dying of hunger, the Soviet government continued to export grain, shipping 18 million hundredweight of grain abroad "in the interests of industrialization."⁴⁷

Famine caused the death of six million—men, women, children, old people and infants—not because Soviet farms produced insufficient

While Russians were dying of hunger, the Communist Party's barns were crammed full. Below, a church used as a storehouse for grain during the implementation of collectivization in the 1930s.





Above, a mother and child starving to death. Below, small children who died from the famine. As a result of Stalin's deliberate famine, four million Ukrainians died.





STALIN'S LIE...



... AND STALIN'S TRUTH

One characteristic of Communism is its reliance on officially produced and disseminated lies. As a result of the famine Stalin fabricated in the Soviet Union, six million died of hunger, and tens of thousands of children were targets of this disaster. This photograph documents the "standard of living" deemed acceptable for Russian children in Stalin's era. But propaganda posters depicted Stalin as a kind, concerned leader receiving gifts of flowers from happy children.

grain, but because the Communist party wanted this man-made famine to happen. In other words, it was mass murder. Stalin didn't want Western countries to learn of the famine because he feared that any aid campaign would only weaken the punishment he had determined for Ukraine. In the periodical magazine *Soviet Studies*, historian Dana Dalrymple comments:

The Soviet Union, in fact, has never officially admitted that the famine existed. American and English studies on the USSR occasionally mention a famine in Ukraine but generally provide few or no details. Yet, previous famines in the USSR have been acknowledged by the government and have been well recorded elsewhere. Why the difference? The answer seems to be that the famine of 1932-34, unlike its predecessors was **a man-made disaster**.⁴⁸

As a result of collectivization, peasants of Ukraine suffered the greatest losses, with at least four million people dead. In Kazakhstan, one million starved as a result of collectivization. In Northern Caucasus and the Black Earth region, there were a million deaths. With one single order, Stalin had sent six million people to their deaths.

Exiles and Work Camps

Stalin murdered millions of others who resisted Communism by sending them into "exile." The Soviet Union singled out many minorities, including Crimean Turks, forcing them from their homes at night and sending them to their deaths, thousands of kilometers away. Those who died on the way numbered in the hundreds of thousands.

In the notes below, written by an instructor of the Party committee in Narym in western Siberia, we see that exile in Russia meant "mass murder":

On 29 and 30 April 1933 two convoys of "outdated elements" were sent to us by train from Moscow and Leningrad. On their arrival in Tomsk they were transferred to barges and unloaded, on 18 May and 26 May, onto the island of Nazino, which is situated at the juncture of the Ob and Nazina rivers. The first convoy contained 5,070 people, and the second 1,044: 6,114 in all. **The transport conditions were appalling: the little food that was**

available was **inedible, and the deportees were cramped into nearly airtight spaces...** The result was a **daily mortality rate of 35-40 people.** These living conditions however, proved to be luxurious in comparison to what awaited the deportees on the island of Nazino (from which they were supposed to be sent on in groups to their final destination, the new sectors that are being colonized farther up the Nazina River). The island of Nazino is a totally uninhabited place, devoid of any settlements... There were no tools, no grain, and no food. That is how their new life began. The day after the arrival of the first convoy, on 19 May, snow began to fall again, and the wind picked up. **Starving, emaciated from months of insufficient food, without shelter, and without tools, ... they were trapped.** They weren't even able to light fires to ward off the cold. **More and more of them began to die...** On the first day, 295 people were buried. It was only on the fourth or fifth day after the convoy's arrival on the island that the authorities sent a bit of flour by boat, really no more than a few pounds per person. Once they had received their meager ration, people ran to the edge of the water and tried to mix some of the flour with water in their hats, their trousers, or their jackets **Most of them just tried to eat it straight off, and some of them even choked to death.** These tiny amounts of flour were the only food that the deportees received during the entire period of their stay on the island. The more resourceful among them tried to make some rudimentary sort of pancakes, but they had nothing to mix or cook them in... It was not long before the first cases of cannibalism occurred.⁴⁹

Stanford researcher Robert Conquest's book, *The Harvest of Sorrow*, has this to say about the exiles of Stalin's time:

Up to 15 and even 20%, **especially young children, are reported dying in transit,** as was to be the case again in the 1940s, with the mass deportations of minority nationalities. Of course, the deportees were in every sort of physical condition, some of the women pregnant. A Cossack mother gave birth on a deportation train. The baby, as was usual, died. Two soldiers threw the body out while the train was on the move. Sometimes the deportees were taken more or less directly to their final destination. Sometimes, they remained in local towns...⁴⁹

In Archangel all the churches were closed and used as transit prisons, in which many-tiered sleeping platforms were put up. The peasants could



A gulag prison in the Magadan region of Siberia. Here, millions lived and died under appalling conditions.

STALIN'S DEATH CAMPS

These photos show some scenes of Stalin's death camps. Those who showed the least resistance to Communist Party policy were sent to labor camps called gulags, where prisoners were worked to death.





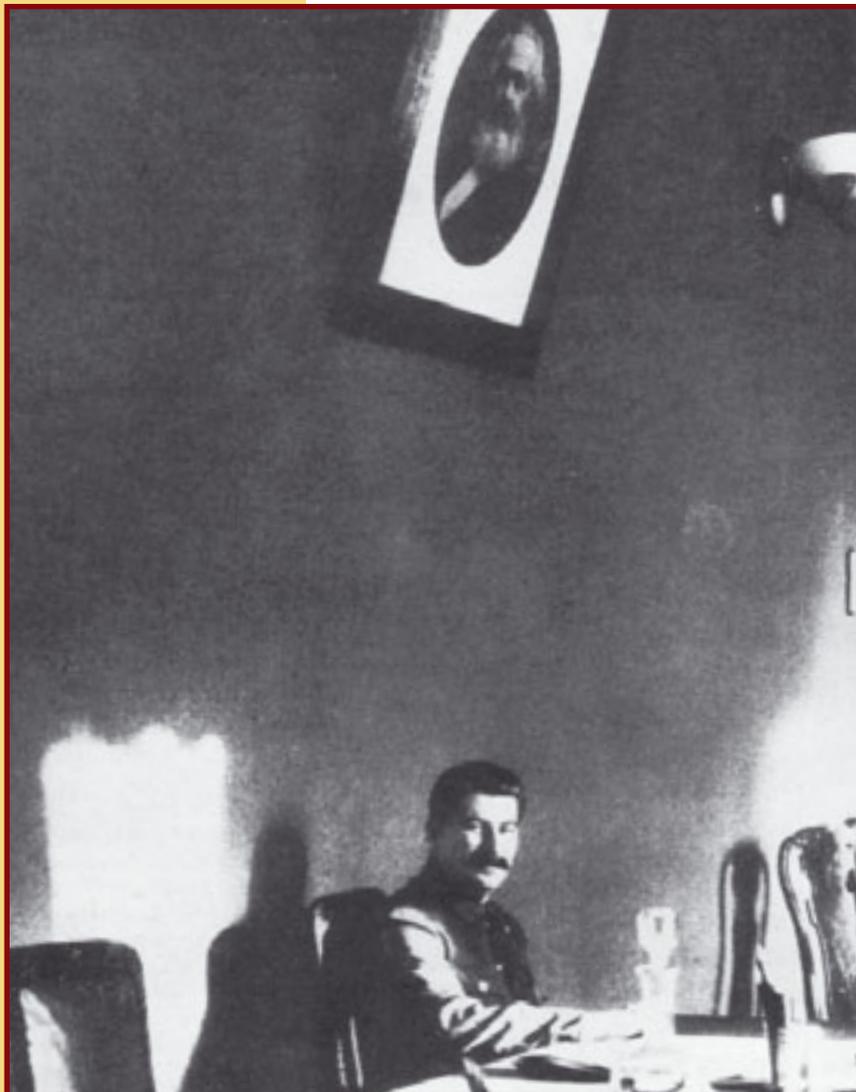
(top) In the Stalinist era, millions of Russian citizens were loaded into trains and taken away.

(Right) Industrial projects in the Soviet Union were carried out by the forced labor of prisoners. This photograph shows Uzbek children among those working under terrible conditions on the construction of the Fergana tunnel.



not wash, and were covered with sores. **They roamed the town begging for help, but there were strict orders to locals not to help them.** Even the dead could not be picked up. The residents, of course, dreaded arrest themselves. In Vologda city too, forty-seven churches were taken over and filled with deportees. ⁵⁰

Another method of mass murder used against exiles were **the labor**



What made Stalin become so merciless was the materialist philosophy he believed in. An unsmiling portrait of Marx hung in the office where he signed millions of death warrants.

camps. Between the years 1928 and 1953 (when Stalin died), an estimated more than 30 million individuals whose ideas differed from those of the Soviet administration were arrested and sent to gulags, generally established in regions like Siberia where conditions were unlivable. More than two thirds of these—that is, **at least 20 million—died in these camps.** Inmates living on the edge of starvation were worked between

14 and 16 hours a day, and were executed by camp guards on the least excuse. Some inmates were deliberately starved to death; others died, their physical health broken from lack of nourishment and terrible living conditions. Many others were made to work in light and shredded clothing, froze to death in the Siberian cold. First a prisoner's fingers and toes would freeze and fall off, then his ear or nose would "break off." Hundreds of thousands are known to have suffered and died in this way. In *The Gulag Archipelago, 1918-1956*, the famous Russian author Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn gives further examples of this horror.

Red Terror in the Eastern Block

Stalin died in 1953. The terror begun by Lenin, which he had continued and extended, left tens of millions dead and subjected dozens of different ethnic groups to torture and anguish. *The Black Book of Communism* gives a broad outline of Communist savagery in the Leninist-Stalinist era:

The execution of tens of thousands of hostages and prisoners without trial, and the murder of hundreds of thousands of rebellious workers and peasants from 1918 and 1922

The famine of 1922, which caused the deaths of 5 million people

The extermination and deportation of the Don Cossacks in 1920

The murder of tens of thousands in concentration camps from 1918 to 1930

The liquidation of almost 690,000 people in the Great Purge of 1937-38

The deportation of 2 million kulaks (and so-called kulaks) in 1930-1932

The destruction of 4 million Ukrainians and 2 million others by means of an artificial and systematically perpetuated famine in 1932-33

The deportation of hundreds of thousands of Poles, Ukrainians, Balts, Moldovans, and Bessarabians from 1939 to 1941, and again in 1944-45

The deportation of the Volga Germans in 1941

The wholesale deportation of Crimean Tatars in 1943

The wholesale deportation of the Chechens in 1944

The wholesale deportation of the Ingush in 1944⁵¹

After Stalin's death, the Soviet regime entered a softer period, limited though it was. But his "reign of fear" continued to govern a society

founded on fear. In a later section, we'll examine more closely the fear that held sway in the Soviet Union and all other Communist societies, and how it was organized.

The Soviets did not limit terror to their own people. The outbreak of World War II let the Soviet Union spread throughout Eastern Europe. When the war ended, a number of countries had fallen under Soviet influence. Within a few years, by means of various political plots and maneuvers, Moscow took them all under its hegemony. Poland, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Romania, Bulgaria, Albania and East Germany fell into the clutches of Stalin's bloody legacy.

The red savagery inflicted a hellish life on these countries. Those opposed to the regime were arrested one by one and subjected to torture and execution. In a short time, fear and horror pervaded the whole of society. Long after in the early 1990's, after the fall of Bulgaria's Communist regime, a woman filmed in a Bulgarian documentary describes what happened to her in the autumn of 1944:

The day after my father was first arrested, another policeman arrived around midday and instructed my mother to go to Police Station No. 10 at five o'clock that afternoon. My mother, a beautiful and kind woman, got dressed and left. We, her three children, all waited for her at home. She came back at half past one in the morning, white as a sheet, with her clothes tattered and torn. As soon as she came in, she went to the stove, opened the door, took off all her clothes, and burned them. Then she took a bath, and only then took us in her arms. We went to bed. The next day she made her first suicide attempt, and there were three more after that, and she tried to poison herself twice. She's still alive, I look after her, but she's quite severely mentally ill. I have never found out what they actually did to her. ⁵²

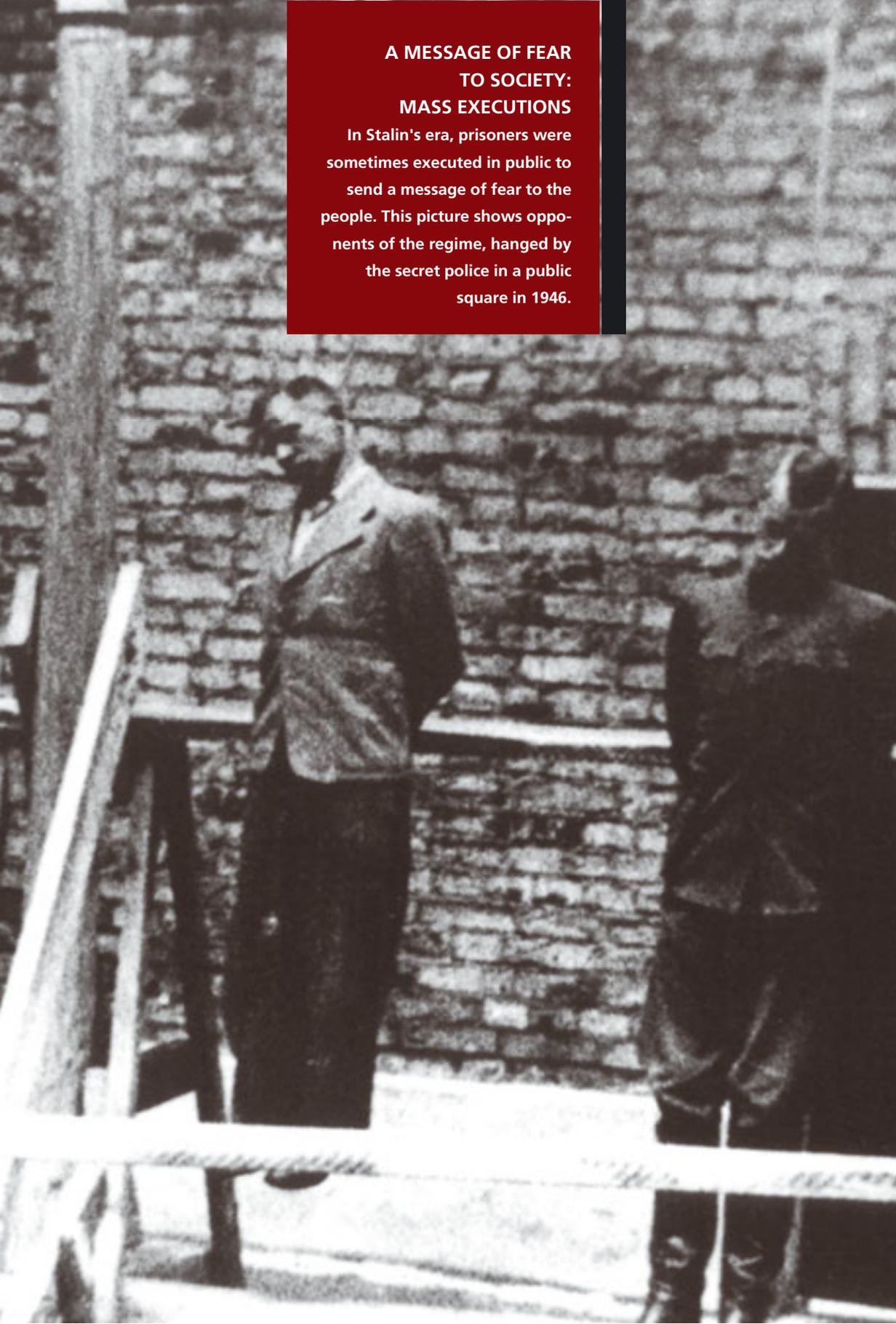
Prisoners suffered terribly. *The Black Book of Communism* describes the torture inflicted by Nicolae Ceausescu's regime in Romania:

Romania was probably the first country in Europe to introduce **the methods of brainwashing** used by the Communists in Asia. Indeed, these tactics may well have been perfected there before they were used on a massive scale in Asia. The evil goal of the enterprise was **to induce prisoners to torture one another**. The idea was conceived in the prison in Pitești. The ex-

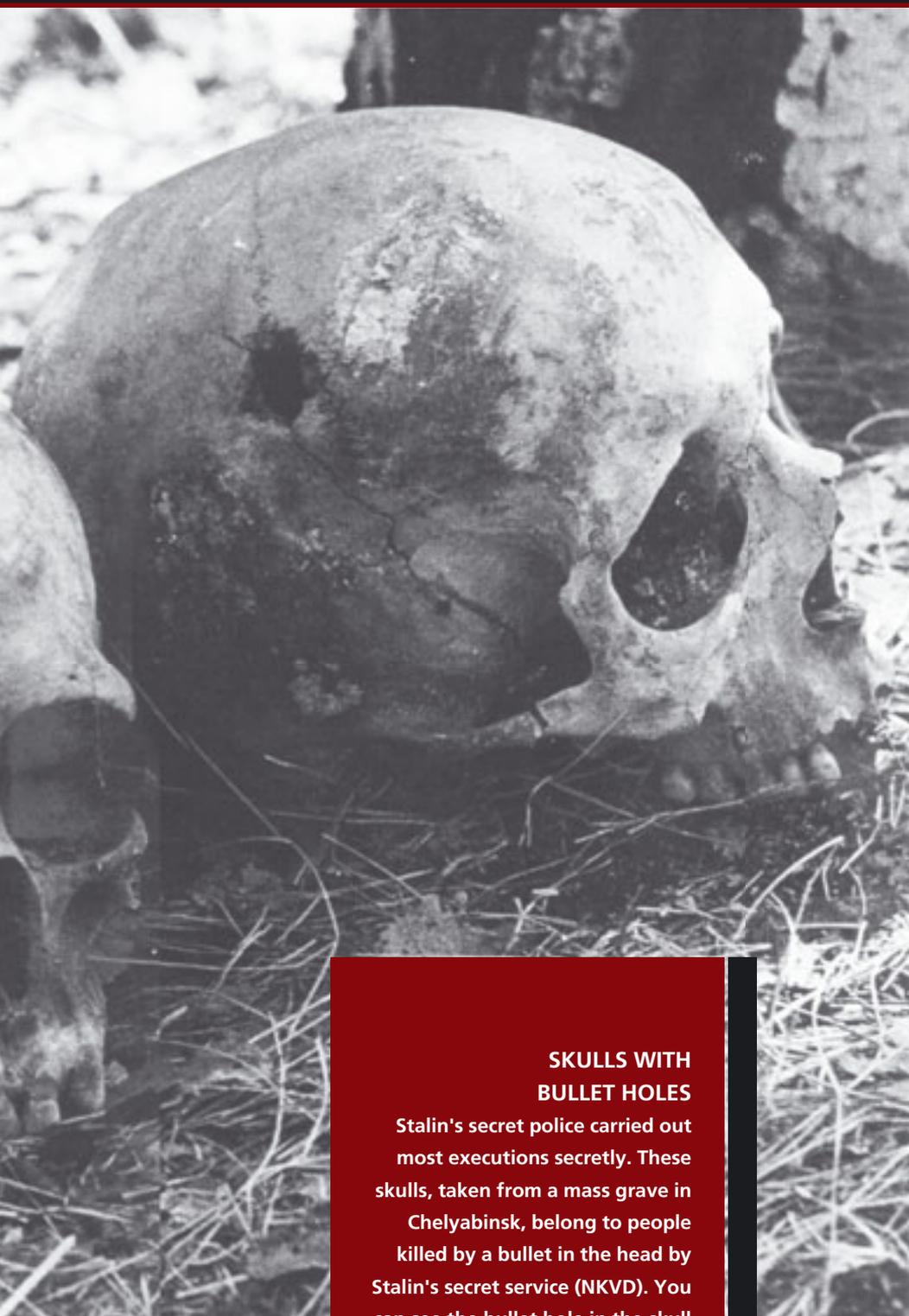


**A MESSAGE OF FEAR
TO SOCIETY:
MASS EXECUTIONS**

In Stalin's era, prisoners were sometimes executed in public to send a message of fear to the people. This picture shows opponents of the regime, hanged by the secret police in a public square in 1946.







SKULLS WITH BULLET HOLES

Stalin's secret police carried out most executions secretly. These skulls, taken from a mass grave in Chelyabinsk, belong to people killed by a bullet in the head by Stalin's secret service (NKVD). You can see the bullet hole in the skull on the right.



The Soviet Union brought Communism and brutality to occupied countries of the Eastern Bloc. Every movement against Moscow was repressed with bloody reprisals. After an independence movement sprang up in Czechoslovakia in the spring of 1968, the Red Army occupied the country. (Above) Soviet tanks in Prague during the occupation in August 1968.

periment began in early December 1949 and lasted approximately three years... The goal of the organization was the **reeducation of political prisoners, combining study of the texts of Communist dogma with mental and physical torture.** ⁵³

The purpose of this was to destroy the prisoners' religious faith; at the end of it they were expected to deny the existence of God:

The Securitate, the Romanian secret police, used all the classic methods of torture during their interrogations: beatings, blows to the soles of the feet, hanging people upside down, and so forth. But in the prison built in the 1930's in Pitești, about 110 kilometers from Bucharest, the cruelty far surpassed those usual methods: The philosopher Virgil Ierunca recalls: "The most vile tortures imaginable were practiced in Pitești. Prisoners' whole bodies were burned with cigarettes: their buttocks would begin to rot, and **their skin fell off, as though they suffered from leprosy.** Others were forced to swallow spoonfuls of excrement, and when they threw it back up, they were forced to eat their own vomit.

...According to Virgil Ierunca, reeducation occurred in four phases. The

first phase was known as "exterior unmasking." The prisoner had to prove his loyalty by admitting what he had hidden when the case had been brought against him and, in particular, admit his links with his friends on the outside. The second phase was "interior unmasking," when he was forced to denounce the people who had helped him inside the prison. The third phase was "public moral unmasking," when **the accused was ordered to curse all the things that he held sacred**, including his friends and family, his wife or girlfriend, and his God if he was a believer. In the fourth phase, candidates for joining the OPCB [Organization of Prisoners with Communist Beliefs] **had to "reeducate" their own best friend, torturing him with their own hands and thus becoming executioners themselves.**

...Eugen Turcanu [head of the OPCB, the purpose of which was the reeducation of political prisoners, combining study of the texts of Communist dogma **with mental and physical torture**] **devised especially diabolical measures to force seminarians to renounce their faith.** Some had their heads repeatedly plunged into a bucket of urine and fecal matter, while the guards intoned a parody of the baptismal rite.⁵⁴

People in every country of the Eastern Bloc were subjected to Communism's crazed murderous impulse and passionate hatred of religion. The Darwinist-Materialist philosophy that regards human beings as animals and maintains that constant violence, torture, and fear are needed to subdue these so-called "animals," brought about a terrible regime of torture in Communist prisons.

This is why those who regard Darwinism as no danger, or think its theories are harmless, must read this book carefully. The Darwinist-Communist ideology's final aim is to turn people against one another, to alienate them from every moral and spiritual value, thereby bestializing human society into a "herd" that can easily be domesticated and governed. No matter with what ideology they disguise themselves, their aim is all the same, as history has witnessed.

Darkness in Cuba

During the Cold War period, the Soviet Union supported the dictatorship of Fidel Castro's Cuba, another Communist regime. The guerilla

movement led by Castro and supported by the Argentine guerilla leader Ernesto "Che" Guevara seized power in 1959. Castro protected his regime with political and military support from the Soviet Union, and even when the USSR collapsed, Castro was able to survive.

The Communist movement in Cuba, and in Latin America in general, had an aspect of romanticism. Che Guevara's guerilla movement in particular was portrayed as the "story of a hero." Many young people mounted posters of Che struggling for Communism and sang Latin American Communist songs. Apparently the Cuban revolution was a "freedom struggle" to save people from cruelty and torture under the Cuban dictator Batista.

That was hardly the truth, however. If we look behind the romantic

Cuba's Communist revolution, brought about by the combined efforts of Fidel Castro and Che Guevara, is usually presented as a romantic episode in a heroic legend. But Communism brought only misery and torture to Cuba.



legends of Che and Fidel, we see the dark face of Cuban dictatorship. *The Black Book of Communism* describes Communist Cuba's labor camps and prisons:

Working conditions were extremely harsh, and prisoners worked almost naked, wearing little more than undergarments. **As a punishment, "troublemakers" were forced to cut grass with their teeth** or to sit in latrine trenches for hours at a time.

The violence of the prison regime affected both political prisoners and common criminals. Violence began with the interrogations conducted by the Departamento Técnico de Investigaciones (DTI). **The DTI used solitary confinement and played on the phobias of the detainees: one woman who was afraid of insects was locked in a cell infested with cockroaches.** The DTI also used physical violence. Prisoners were forced to climb a staircase wearing shoes filled with lead and were then thrown back down the stairs. Psychological torture was also used, often observed by a medical team. The guards used sodium pentathol and other drugs to keep prisoners awake. In the Mazzora hospital, electric shock treatment was routinely used as a punishment without any form of medical observation. The guards also used attack dogs and mock executions; disciplinary cells had neither water nor electricity; and **some detainees were kept in total isolation...**

...Visits by relatives provide another opportunity to humiliate prisoners. In La Cabaña prisoners were made to appear naked before their family, and imprisoned husbands were forced to watch intimate body searches carried out on their wives.

Female inmates in Cuban prisons are especially vulnerable to acts of sadism by guards. More than 1,100 women have been sentenced as political prisoners since 1959. In 1963 they were housed in the Guanajay prison. Numerous eyewitness statements attest to beatings and other humiliations. For instance, before showering, detainees were forced to undress in full view of the guards, who then beat them. ⁵⁵

After the 1959 revolution, about ten thousand were executed. More than 30 thousand were imprisoned under the conditions described above. And, just as wherever else a Communist regime was established, it brought pain, torture and fear. Meanwhile, the Cuban people gradually grew impoverished, despite the massive aid from the Soviets.

Soviet Massacres in Afghanistan

To fully examine Marxist-Leninist Bolshevik ideology and its record of savagery, we must also look at the countries invaded by the Soviet Union. Afghanistan was one of those subjected to the greatest cruelty.

In 1978, Communist army generals and some Communist civilians organized a coup in Afghanistan, announced that henceforth, the country would be run by a Communist regime. They also initiated a ruthless war against religion. A book on the subject describes this policy as follows:

Shortly afterward, **the government began an antireligious crusade. The Koran was burned in public, and imams and other religious leaders were arrested and killed.** On the night of 6 January 1979 all 130 men in the Mojaddedi clan, a leading Shiite group, were massacred. All religious practices were banned...⁵⁶

Afghanistan Communists were paid by the Soviet Union, inflicting mass murder on their own people according to directives sent by "advisors" from Moscow. After a short time in power, they inflicted great terror. Afghanistan scholar Michael Barry describes one such incident:

In March 1979 ...**1,700 adults and children, the entire male population of the village [of Kerala], were all assembled in the town square and machine-gunned at point-blank range.** The dead and dying were thrown into three mass graves and buried with a bulldozer. For a while afterward, the women could still see the earth move slightly as the wounded struggled to escape, but soon all movement stopped. All the women fled to Pakistan.⁵⁷

At the same time, terror reigned in Kabul. On the eastern outskirts of the city, the Pol-e-Charki prison became a concentration camp. In *The Black Book of Communism*, the situation in the prison is described in this way:

As Sayyed Abdullah, the director of the prison, explained to the prisoners: "You're here to be turned into a heap of rubbish." Torture was common; the worst form entailed live burial of prisoners in the latrines. Hundreds of prisoners were killed every night, and the dead and dying were buried by bulldozers. Stalin's method of punishing entire ethnic groups for the ac-



In 1979, the Red Army occupied Afghanistan, putting into effect a brutal policy of genocide that took no account of women and children. Above, a so-called victory march by the Red Army in Moscow in 1984.

tions of some of its members adopted, leading to the arrest on 15 August 1979 of 300 people from the Hazaras ethnic group who were suspected of supporting the resistance. "One hundred fifty of them were **buried alive by the bulldozers, and the rest were doused with gasoline and burned alive.**" In September 1979 the prison authorities admitted that 12,000 prisoners had been eliminated. The director of Pol-e-Charki told anyone who would listen: "**We'll leave only 1 million Afghans alive—that's all we need to build socialism.**"⁵⁸

All these efforts were directed from Moscow. Indeed, all Afghanistan's inner turmoil was first planned by the Soviets. They had incited the Afghani Communists to make the coup, which they then used as an excuse to invade the country in order to support the so-called "democratic" regime. Most political historians accept that the motive behind Moscow's plan was regarding Islam as a source of danger to the Communists.

On December 27, 1979, the Red Army invaded Afghanistan, with the excuse of supporting the Afghani Communist regime against its Muslim "opponents." With this, the savagery inflicted on the Afghani

people grew. The Red Army remained as an occupying force in Afghanistan for ten years, during which time it used cruel and pitiless methods in its attempt to destroy opposing groups that rightfully resisted it. One Afghani opponent describes these methods:

The Soviets attacked every single house, looting and raping the women.

The barbarism was worse than instinctive, and appeared to have been planned. They knew that in carrying out such acts they were destroying the very foundation of our society.⁵⁹

Against the Afghani Muslims, the Red Army used the basest methods: They made mines look like toys in order to get Afghani children to play with them, subjected captive opponents to terrible tortures, and bombed civilians without hesitation. The end of their ten-year occupation left tens of thousands of maimed and dead. This is why many Afghani young people were left without arms or legs, and why since then, Afghanistan has been one of the countries that consume the most prosthetic limbs. But the Soviets' withdrawal left a power vacuum, and a bloody civil war ensued. In short, the savagery begun in the 1970's at Soviet instigation brought Afghanistan a half century of cruelty and pain.

As mentioned earlier, Communist Russia saw the gradual spread of Islam as a danger and inflicted cruelty to prevent this spread. It forbade Afghanis to worship, burned Qur'ans and murdered those who practiced their Islamic faith. But the invaders did not take into account one important point: Those with no faith at all cannot conceive of a believer's intimate relationship with God. They assume that by destroying holy books, they can make faith disappear too. But faith lies in the heart. Those who truly believe know that all the adversities they suffer are tests from God; therefore, they bear them patiently.

In the Qur'an (2: 155-157), God says to those who believe:

We will test you with a certain amount of fear and hunger and loss of wealth and life and fruits. But give good news to the steadfast: Those who, when disaster strikes them, say, "We belong to God and to Him we will return." Those are the people who will have blessings and mercy from their Lord; they are the ones who are guided.

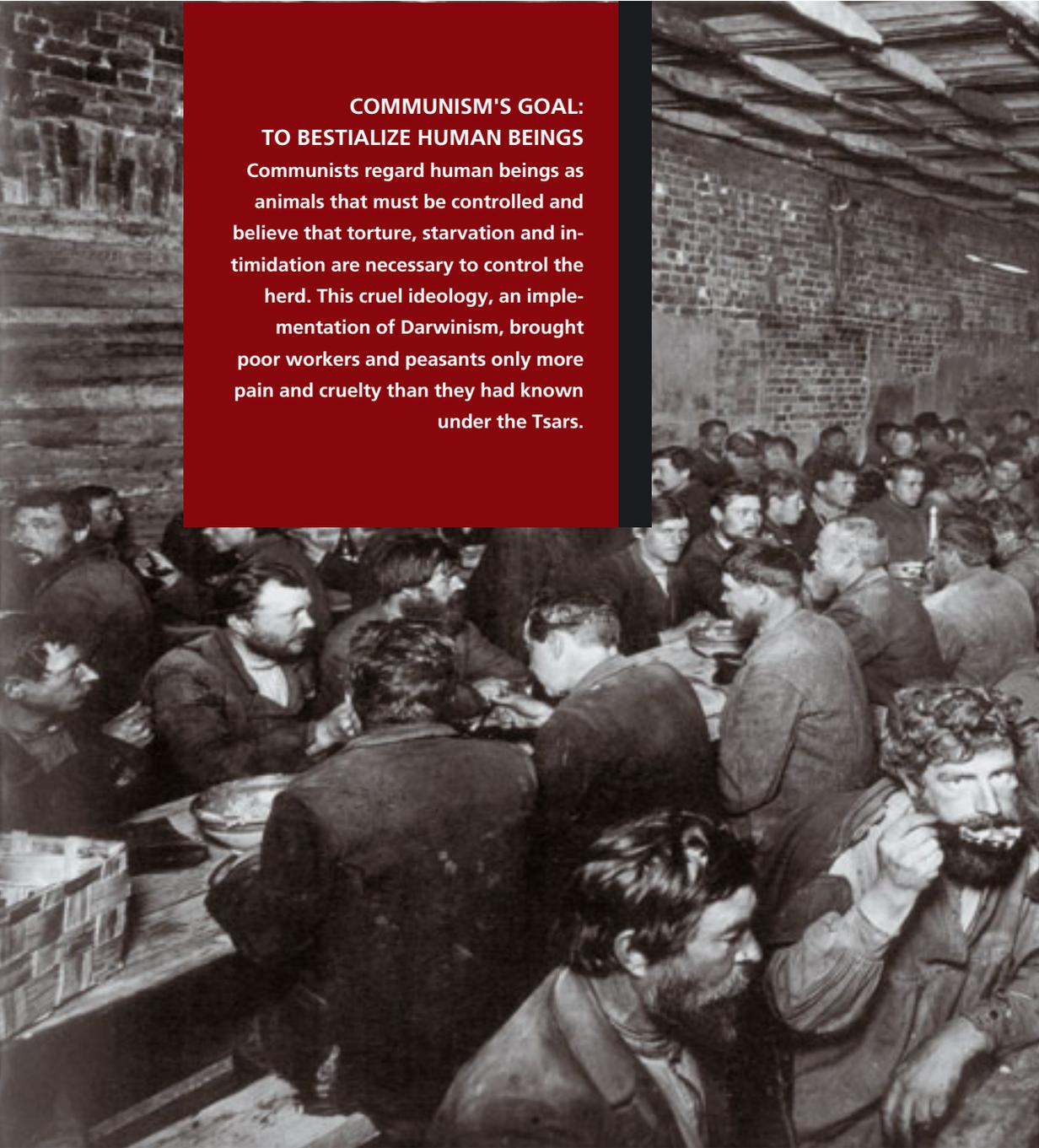
As stated in this verse, the faithful are tested in many ways in this world, but in every difficulty they turn to God and ask His help. For this reason, no Muslim worries or feels hopeless in the face of the difficulties he encounters. On the contrary, he takes pleasure in the knowledge that God has revealed His promise in the Qur'an and that, in the hereafter, his joy will be overflowing.

The Philosophy behind Communist Savagery: The Bestialization of Human Beings

The 20th-century Communist lie, proposed by materialist philosophers like Marx and Engels, has been a death machine with an insatiable thirst for blood. Communism has committed terrible crimes, submitting human beings to social pressures, fear, exile, torture, labor camps, famine, and slaughter. But in order not to experience this same savagery again in the future, we must consider its true cause. Is it merely a question of the cruelty and personal ambition of dictators like Lenin and Stalin? Or of the implementation of a Darwinist-based Communist ideology?

As you'll see, the second alternative is the correct one. Savagery is the evident, **natural result of the Communist idea that a human being is just another "species."** As Marx never tired of pointing out, Communism is based on Darwin's theory of evolution, which describes human beings as advanced animals and which suggests that conflict and struggle among peoples, oppression, cruelty, use of force are natural and legitimate. If someone who accepts this philosophy has enough power and resources, he will find it easy to commit all kinds of cruelty. About this idea, *The Black Book of Communism* has this to say:

Putting people to death required a certain amount of study. Relatively few people actively desire the death of their fellow human beings, so a method of facilitating this had to be found. **The most effective means was the denial of the victim's humanity through a process of dehumanization.** As Alain Brossat notes: "The barbarian ritual of the purge, and the idea of the extermination machine in top gear are closely linked in the discourse and practice of persecution to the animalization of the Other, to the reduction



**COMMUNISM'S GOAL:
TO BESTIALIZE HUMAN BEINGS**

Communists regard human beings as animals that must be controlled and believe that torture, starvation and intimidation are necessary to control the herd. This cruel ideology, an implementation of Darwinism, brought poor workers and peasants only more pain and cruelty than they had known under the Tsars.

of real or imaginary enemies to a zoological state."

Alain Brossat [French philosopher, author] recalls that European shivarees and carnivals had begun a **long tradition of the animalization of the other**, which resurfaced in the political caricatures of the eighteenth century. This metamorphic rite allowed all sorts of hidden crises and latent conflicts to



be expressed. In Moscow in the 1930s, there were no metaphors at all. **The animalized adversary really was treated like a prey to be hunted, before being shot in the head.** Stalin systemized these methods and was the first to use them on a large scale, and they were adopted by his heirs in Cambodia, China and elsewhere. But Stalin himself did not invent these methods. The blame should probably rest on Lenin's shoulders. **After he took power, he often described his enemies as "harmful insects," "lice," "scorpions," and "bloodsuckers."** ⁶⁰

As Marx, Engels and Lenin emphasized many times, Communist savagery is nothing more than the implementation of Darwinism's view that humans are merely animals.

According to Stéphane Courtois, research director of The National Scientific Research Center (Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique-CNRS) in France and an expert in the history of Communism:



In Communism there exists a sociopolitical eugenics, a form of social Darwinism. In the words of Dominic Colas, "As master of the knowledge of the evolution of social species, Lenin decided who should disappear by virtue of having been condemned to the dustbin of history." From the moment that a decision had been made on a "scientific" basis (that is, based in political and historical ideology, as well as in Marxism-Leninism) that the bourgeoisie represented a stage of humanity that had been surpassed, its

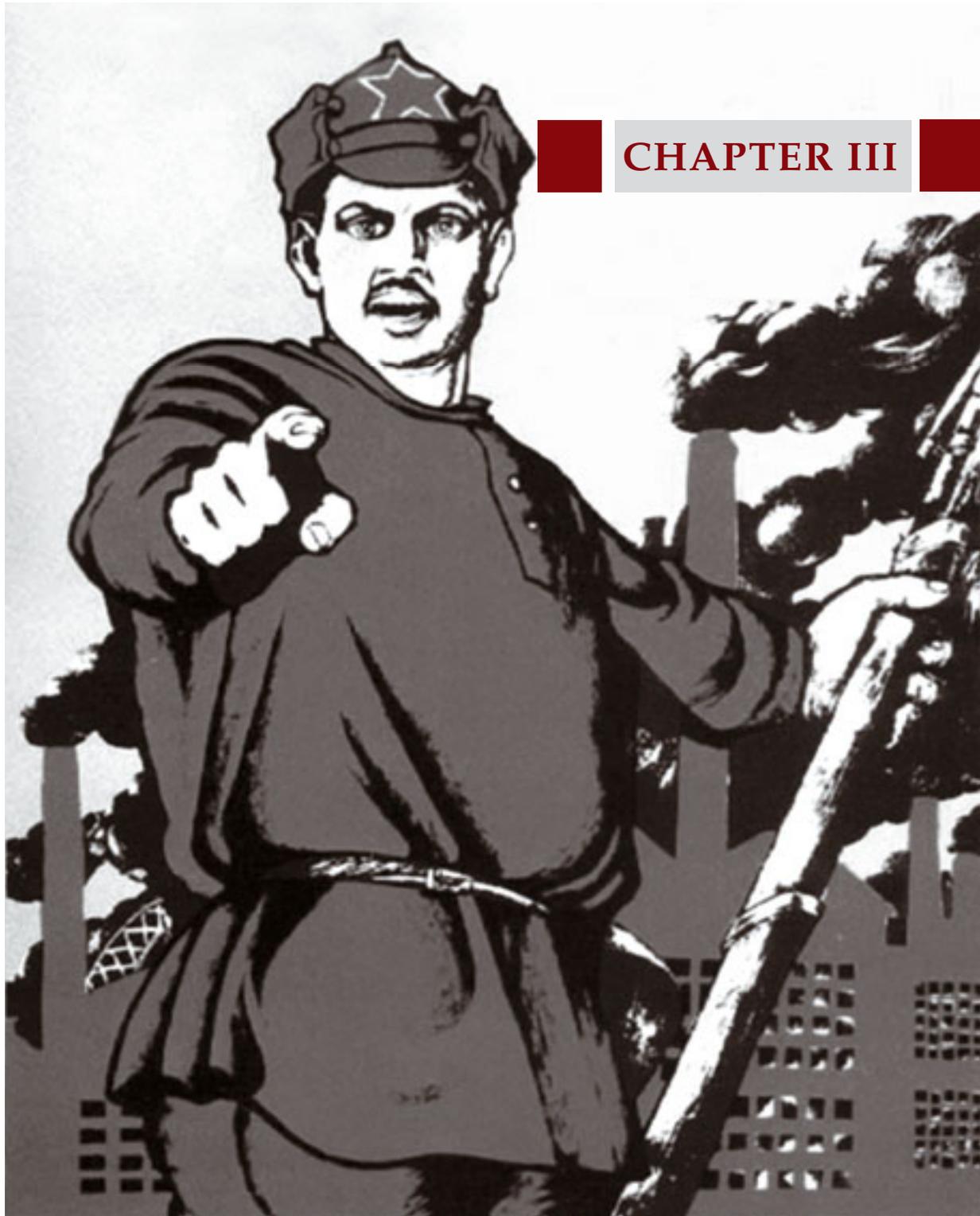


liquidation as a class and the liquidation of the individuals who actually or supposedly belonged to it could be justified.⁶¹

At the end of his comments, Courtois points out, The roots of Marxist-Leninism are perhaps not to be found in Marx at all, but in a deviant version of Darwinism, applied to social questions with the same catastrophic results that occur when such ideas are applied to racial issues.⁶²

Certainly it is to be found: Communism is definitely rooted in Darwinism—not a "deviant version of Darwinism," but authentic Darwinism. The source of the ideas that humans beings are a species of animal, that history progresses through a natural and inevitable conflict, that no one is responsible for his actions is Charles Darwin. Darwin simply proposed the theory; the Communists implemented it. The bloody account of 20th-century Communism, which presents all the nonsense of dialectical materi-

alism in the guise of "science," is in reality applied Darwinism.



CHAPTER III

**ЗАПИСАЛСЯ
ДОБРОВОЛЬЦЕМ?**

THE DULL WORLD OF COMMUNISM



Communist ideology has produced a noticeably conservative, rigid, colorless society. To understand this, one needs only recall Communists' attitude toward their own citizens. As stressed earlier, the materialist philosophy at the root of Communism sees a human being as composed only of matter. It denies the existence of a human soul or spirit, claiming that human consciousness is nothing more than a product of "matter in motion." To the materialist, therefore, human beings are only organic machines. All their thoughts and feelings are deemed to be the results of chemical reactions happening within the machine.

In other words, materialists believe that the cells and the atoms composing us have consciousness, the ability to think, see and hear, take pleasure in beauty, and feel sorrow when confronted with bad experiences. If you asked these people if an atom can think, they would certainly say no, but they do maintain such an irrational claim as "thinking ability arises when some atoms come together to form the brain."

Moreover, Marxist ideology supposes that all of human culture and consciousness is materially based. **According to Communist thinking, no independent consciousness exists apart from the material world around us.** On the contrary, human consciousness is experienced completely within the world of matter. Marx claimed that, **"It is not the consciousness of men that determines their being, but, on the contrary, their**



The cold faces of Lenin, Engels and Marx adorning important places in every Communist regime.

social being that determines their consciousness." ⁶³ Ludwig Feuerbach, one leading Marxist thinker, summed up the nonsense of materialist logic when he declared, **"a person is what he eats."**

Because of their materialist prejudice, Marxists view human society in terms of material criteria. They concentrate much of their attention on the idea of "class" as a material concept. Class refers to the various economic levels in a society and, for Marxists, is the only important criterion. According to Marxists, for example, workers make up a single class called the "proletariat"; capitalists compose the "bourgeoisie" class. Because all workers live in unsuitable conditions, therefore, they must share the same "proletarian consciousness." In the same way, capitalists must all share a "bourgeois" consciousness because they all share in the same wealth. Marxists don't accept that a worker or a factory owner might possibly have a totally different consciousness arising from his own independent character or world view. ⁶⁴

A natural result of this point of view is to divide people into separate material categories and evaluate them accordingly. For a Marxist, the only existing categories—such as the bourgeoisie, the little (or petite) bourgeoisie, the proletariat, imperialists and compradors—are completely based on material factors. If a person works in a factory with his own hands, his existence is determined by the work he does. If a villager

works in the fields, his only consciousness is that of a villager.

Because of this point of view, Marxists claim that the course of history's only determinant is the "means of production." Marx's famous *Das Kapital* tries to interpret history in terms of means of production. According to Marx, "primitive society" was a group of hunter-gatherers. With the switch to agriculture, a society of "serfs" was born. Later "feudal society" developed, along with new changes in the kind of production. When machines were invented, a new kind of production called industry came to be. With it came "capitalist society." According to Marx, such concepts as religion, state, law, family and morality all arose and developed from differences in the kinds of production.

Marxism's narrow view of history has been disproved by the explanations of many thinkers, to say nothing of concrete experience. Therefore, there's no reason to demonstrate that invalidity here, only to focus on the conservative, dull, rigid, colorless society that a materialist enterprise produces.

Contrary to the Marxist belief, the human spirit or soul isn't a material product. On the contrary, what we call matter is seen, heard and felt by spirit. Therefore, it's not possible to define the human spirit in terms of the material conditions in which it finds itself. God created the human spirit with various aspects and tendencies, such as intelligence, imagination, feelings and desires. No matter what circumstances a person finds himself in, these tendencies will not change; they will only be expressed in a different way.

God created the first man and gave him the same qualities and skills as today's human beings. For this reason, our level consciousness does not differ according to the place or time we live in. The will, feelings, thoughts and mind of the very first human being in history are the same as for anyone living today. The only difference is the means he uses to express them. An individual's level of consciousness varies according to how he uses the mental skills he has been given and the urgings of his conscience. Muslims, who are conscious of this, are not limited by time, location, environment or particular ideological ideas. As God has commanded them in the Qur'an, they ponder everything that happens to them, trying to grasp its subtleties and see its beauty. In

the Qur'an (2:164), God describes the believer's consciousness:

In the creation of the heavens and earth, and the alternation of the night and day, and the ships which sail the seas to people's benefit, and the water which God sends down from the sky—by which He brings the earth to life when it was dead and scatters about in it creatures of every kind—and the varying direction of the winds, and the clouds subservient between heaven and earth, there are Signs for people who use their intellect.

For this reason, those who believe in God have a wide horizon. They always think freely, and are endlessly creative in various fields of art and aesthetics.

Unable to grasp this truth, Marx and his followers tried to cram human consciousness in the extremely narrow, fabricated mold of "class-consciousness." They forced everyone they could influence to think and live in these imaginary terms. In every country where Marxism took root, just as it murdered tens of millions with no remorse, so it froze human expression in art, aesthetics, and other expressions of the human spirit.

The Lifelessness of "Communist Art"

With the Bolshevik Revolution of October 1917, Russia established the world's first Marxist regime. First with Lenin, then under Stalin's steel fist, Communist ideology reshaped the whole country. Its influence can be seen in the most important elements of culture such as art, aesthetics and architecture.

Immediately after the revolution, the idea of "proletarian art" came to the fore. In a magazine called *Iskusstvo Kommuny* ("Commune Art"), Communist artists announced their intention to produce works of art to serve proletarian culture. They expressed similar ideas in the organization called *Proletkult* ("Proletarian Culture").

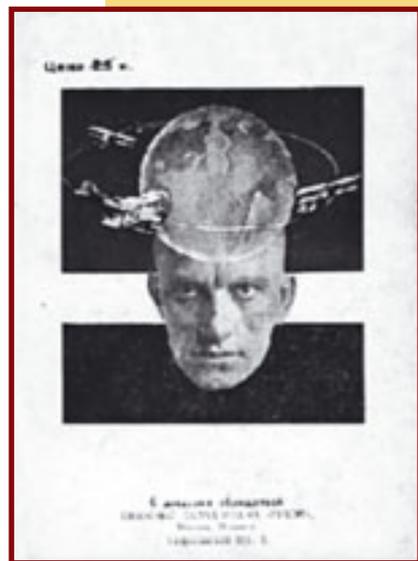
They began to discuss the meaning of "**proletarian art.**" From the beginning of the 1920s, well-known Russian artists like Vladimir Yevgrafovich Tatlin and Aleksandr Mikhailovich Rodchenko defended **the idea that an artist must be a technician who gives practical solutions**

to problems of the proletariat. Lenin supported this idea and suppressed many areas of art regarded as useless from the point of view of the proletariat. For example, Tatlin and Rodchenko determined that an artistic representation would be of no use to a worker in his day-to-day life and decided that painting was an invalid form of art!

In 1921, this new understanding of art, **called "constructivism," became the Soviet Union's official art policy.** Tatlin, in the forefront of this way of thinking, thought it was necessary to do something "useful" like designing houses and furniture, instead of painting useless pictures. To contribute to the life of the proletariat, he designed clothing for them to wear during their long working hours, to provide them with the greatest warmth and flexibility with the least weight and expenditure of raw materials. He also designed a kind of stove, which would give the greatest heat with the least amount of fuel.

All artists did not become "engineers" like Tatlin, but they did accept the idea of "proletarian art" and used their talents to serve Communist ideology. Almost all Soviet artists of the time produced posters, signs and slogans for use in workers' clubs and small gatherings called "soviets." All shared common images: vigorous, well-muscled Soviet villagers and workers with a hammer or a sickle in hand, angry proletarian figures standing up and breaking their chains into pieces, armed soldiers marching beneath red banners under Lenin's leadership...

Aleksander Rodchenko, a leader in "Socialist Realism."

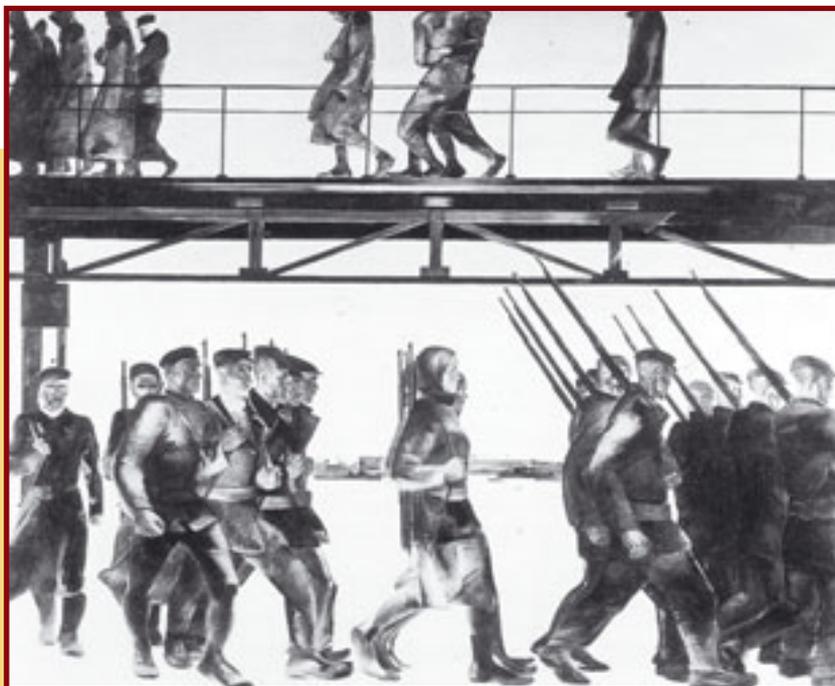


In this new understanding of art, **the concept of "aesthetics" was absent, even regarded as a dangerous bourgeois attachment.** The esthetic ideal was far removed from all pictures, statues, posters, interior decoration and architectural design. *The Encyclopedia Britannica* says that an **"anti-estheticism"** ruled Communist art, which became characterized by a plethora of rough, dull and crude features.

In Stalin's time, this understanding of art became the even more conservative official policy known as **"Socialist Realism,"** described as the view that art is dedicated to the 'realistic' representation of the principles of the Soviet revolution (that is Communist ideology) in the daily life of the proletariat. According to Socialist Realism, novels should depict Communist militants as decisive, courageous and self-sacrificing, describe their supposedly exemplary struggles, and show how happy villagers and workers are, thanks to the revolution.

Artists of Socialist Realism had no compunction about depicting the direct opposite of the truth—that the revolution did not bring the

A 1927 painting by Russian artist Aleksandr Deyneka entitled "The Defense of Petrograd."



people happiness, but hunger, oppression and death. Actually, Socialist Realism is not realism, but an expression of romantic fantasy. According to *The Encyclopedia Britannica*, "**Socialist Realism looks back to Romanticism in that it encourages a certain heightening and idealizing of heroes and events to mold the consciousness of the masses.**"

Socialist Realism, defined in 1932 during the bloodiest days of Stalin's regime, remained the Soviet Union's official state art policy until the 1980s. Throughout this entire period, Communism's cheerless, cold and stagnant atmosphere dominated Soviet art. In order to gain international recognition, the Soviet regime encouraged artists and stressed the importance of the production of new works of art. But because of Socialist Realism's dogmatic approach, these works remained pressed in their narrow, cheerless and ugly molds. From 1949 onwards, Socialist Realism passed to China where a Communist regime had taken power.



Under Communism, art lost all esthetic meaning and turned into a mechanical means of propaganda. These drawings purport to depict the model person—a crude, strong, dull worker or peasant who thinks of nothing beyond obeying the system.



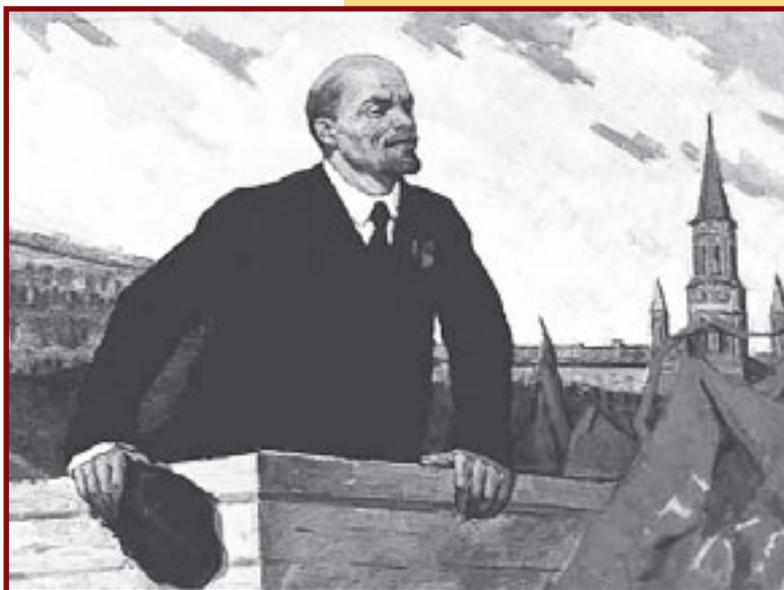
Soviet propaganda posters from the 1920's: "The Ten Commandments of the Proletariat" and "The Lie of International Imperialism."

The same dull, crude understanding of art prevailed there too.

In the period before the revolution, however, Russian society had produced some excellent works of art and magnificent architecture. The world-famous Hermitage Museum in St. Petersburg contained an outstanding collection of art, albeit largely by European artists. But Communism froze Russian art in 1917 and even reversed its development.

The cheerlessness of Communist **art results from the materialist philosophy** that determines the Communist world view. Materialist philosophy, superficial thinking that regards a human being as only an assortment of matter, tries to reduce everything to the material. Applying materialist philosophy to art has been a fiasco, as in every other area where it's been applied.

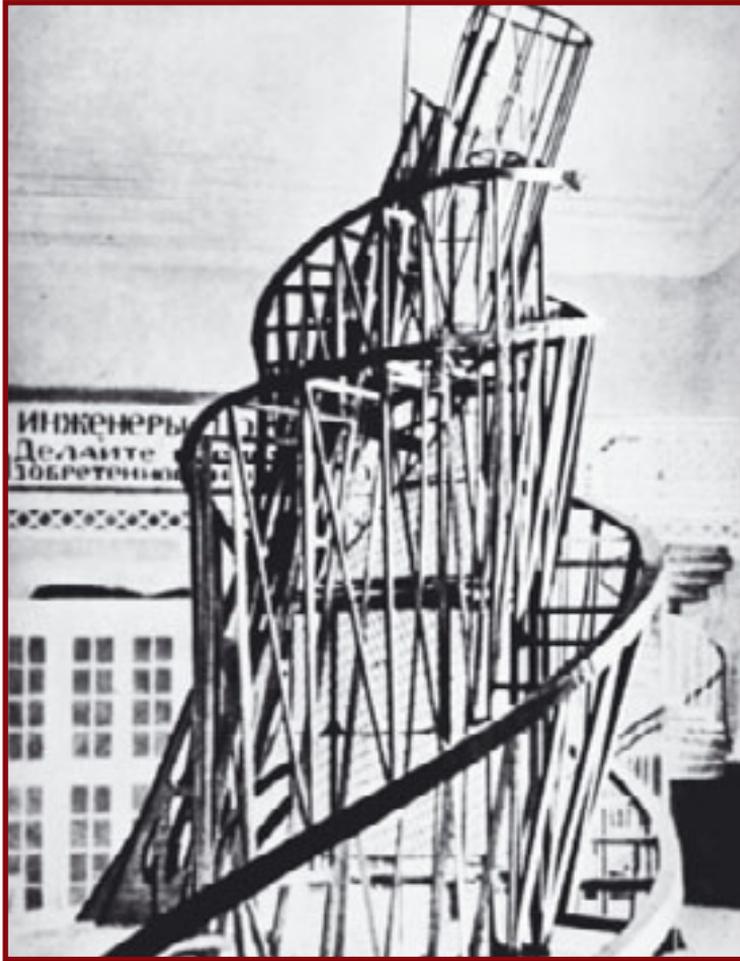
Real art is a God-given esthetic pleasure through which humans can express their love of beauty and other feelings and emotions. In order to produce works of fine art, the human spirit must be able to ex-



Communist leaders are always depicted with a cold, rigid and pitiless expression. These portraits of Lenin, drawn by Soviet artists, express Communism's dark spirit.



An example of the "anti-estheticism" of Communist art, a work created in the 1920's by Soviet artist Vladimir Tatlin.



Another example of Communist anti-estheticism: the depiction of a proletariat by a Soviet artist of that era.





A propaganda poster for the Third Communist International, organized by the Soviet Union. The cold world of Communism is reflected on the face of the militant carrying the flag.

press, in the freest way possible, the innate tendencies created within it. The Communist dictatorship founded in the Soviet Union—later copied by regimes in China, the Eastern Bloc, Indochina and Cuba—completely removed this free and comfortable environment. They killed art by subjecting their peoples to constant oppression.

Above all, by alienating them from religion, Communism delivered art the biggest blow. Foremost of those feelings that inspire art is the spiritual pleasure and fervor derived from religion. All of history's greatest artists, sculptors and architects created works based on religious themes and drew strength and inspiration from their spiritual beliefs. They did not regard a human as a species of animal that would perish with death, but as a being that God endowed with spirit. They loved to extol humanity in their works and show reflections of God's artistry in creation. In societies with no religion, people inevitably lose this fervor and sense of pleasure and become encompassed by a spiritual purposelessness. This has been experienced in every Communist regime. **As a result of irreligion and the ideas that a human being is a**

species of animal, human life has no value and an individual ceases to exist when his body dies, such societies have become dominated by pessimism, melancholy, cheerlessness and meaninglessness.

Mao's Red China (which we'll examine later) displayed further striking examples of Communist conservatism and narrow-mindedness. Everyone had to wear the same kind of clothing and during the Cultural Revolution, it was forbidden to keep domestic animals.

The Nonsense of "Communist Science"

Science was another field that received a great blow from Communism. Stalin's regime, along with inventing the concept of "proletarian art," also proposed the idea of "**proletarian science.**" According to this theory, there is bourgeois science and there is proletarian science. The differences between the two will lead to different results. We might compare this to Nazi Germany's rejection of findings by Jewish scientists—Einstein, among others.

Proletarian science is actually nothing more than science corrupted according to the exigencies of materialist philosophy. One obvious demonstration was the "**Lysenko affair,**" which put its stamp on Stalin's Soviet regime.

Trofim Denisovich Lysenko was educated in various agriculture schools in the Soviet Union. He came to Stalin's attention in the 1940s and assumed the total domination of Soviet policy in agriculture and biology. Most importantly, Lysenko rejected the laws of genetics discovered by the Austrian priest-botanist Gregor Mendel at the end of the 19th century and demonstrated by further experiments in the 20th. Lysenko dismissed Mendel's laws as "bourgeois science" and instead supported the thesis of the 18th century French evolutionist biologist Lamarck on the "inheritance of acquired traits."

Lysenko's idea was based on no scientific proof. But because the Soviet Union was experiencing a major agricultural crisis in the 1930s, Lysenko began to attract attention. He promised that implementing his theory would ensure a much larger and efficient grain production than other biologists believed. He claimed, for example, that when grown

under the proper conditions, wheat would produce rye seeds—and he made preparations to achieve this. (This is like saying that dogs living in the wild will eventually bear litters of foxes—a claim that's totally contrary to science, of which no instance has ever been observed.) In 1940, Stalin put Lysenko at the head of the Institute of Genetics of the Academy of Sciences of the USSR, and he held this chair for twenty-five years. Lysenko also headed the Lenin All-Union Academy of Agricultural Sciences, one of the Soviet Union's most important institutions.

In 1948, it was forbidden to be educated or do research in the area of classical genetics. **Those geneticists who rejected Lysenko's evolutionist thesis, and continued to support Mendel's genetic discovery, were secretly arrested and executed.**

Meanwhile, Lysenko's agricultural policy created widespread lack of productivity. For example, he claimed that putting seeds in cold water for a while before being sown, would make them gain resistance to cold weather conditions. To test this hypothesis, he had tons of seeds immersed in cold water and then sown on the Siberian steppes. Of course, none of the seeds sprouted. Similar experiments all ended in disaster, but these failures were never spoken of until the 1960s. Finally, in 1964, it was officially acknowledged that Lysenko's theory was wrong. Great efforts were expended to have Mendel's genetic discoveries taught and applied again. Russia moved to the American type of mixed hybridization management, using dung to fertilize the fields. Even though their nonsensical thesis had dealt such a great blow to Soviet science and agriculture, Lysenko and his



Because Lysenko rejected the laws of genetics for the theory of evolution, Soviet agriculture remained backward for decades.



Lysenko explains to Soviet experts the agricultural project based on "proletarian science."

supporters didn't abandon their ideas. In fact, they maintained their positions and titles in the Soviet scientific establishment.

Generally, modern evolutionists make no mention of the Lysenko affair, **an historical documentation of the great damage that can be inflicted by a blind attachment to materialism and the theory of evolution.** When they do speak of Lysenko's ideas, they dismiss them as a dogmatic form of Lamarckism. But he and his supporters were not only Lamarckists, they were also Darwinists, regarding Lamarck and Darwin

Here, Lysenko's nonsense theories are explained in detail to Russian peasants who are forced to implement them. The result was a huge fiasco.



as two complementary evolutionist theoreticians.

When Lamarck's unscientific theory of "inheritance of acquired characteristics" was abandoned as baseless, they realized that left Darwin's theory with no foundation. Therefore, they blindly continued to support Lamarck.

In his article "Darwinian Evolution and Human History," the Marxist and Darwinist thinker Robert M. Young comments:

Moving nearer to our own time, the belief that society and nature followed laws which were both evolutionary and communist led to one of the most disastrous episodes in the Stalinist regime in the 1930s and 1940s—Lysenkoism. Nature's laws were said to be dialectical, and any biologist who adhered to non-orthodox views lost his job, often his liberty, and sometimes his life. **Lysenkoism was an evolutionism which ignored or opposed the interesting developments in genetics in the rest of the world. But this was done in the name of Darwinism...** ⁶⁵

The resistance to the laws of genetics that Soviet administrators of Lysenko's time displayed is just one example of materialist fanaticism. In the same way that Lysenko and his supporters refused to accept the laws of genetics, many of today's materialists also close their eyes to the signs of creation that science has discovered in all living things just because of their own ideological prejudices. To produce a viable opposing theory, they have squandered millions of dollars and many years of labor on research that has come to nothing.

Communist Ideology's Effect on Social Life

In the 20th century, Communist fanaticism has had very negative influences on the social life in countries under their regimes, forcing on people a hellish life devoid of compassion, denying the existence of God, alienating them from religion and discounting all spiritual and moral values. It has imprinted on societies a mentality that thinks of human beings as chunks of matter that will perish after death, establishing one of the most inhuman institutions in history. The Communist system—as observed in the Soviet Union, the Eastern Bloc countries and Red



Communism is a regime of fear. The people are continually intimidated by stern-faced uniformed officials looking down from above.

China—intends to create model societies that regard their citizens as “advanced herds of animals,” just as the materialist-Darwinist theory intended.

Some of Communist society's basic tenets can be listed as follows:

- Darwin's theory of evolution and Engel's "natural dialectic" regard human beings as an advanced species of animal. Therefore, the idea that society is a herd of animals is expressed at every level. Communist regimes produce a cheerless, spiritless, lifeless person, somewhere between an animal and a machine.

- The Communist system places no value on individuals. Since there are so many in the herd, the loss of one cannot matter. The disabled or those who cannot work are expelled from the herd and left to die. Those in ill health are regarded as detriments. Because there is no forgiveness, mercy, or sense of loyalty, everyone fears old age and death. The aged receive no compassion, pity, or respect in the suggestion that they should be like "elephants that go to the graveyard before they die."



The special Djzhernsky Unit, used to suppress public demonstrations in the Soviet Union.

- As with animals in a herd, society is composed of same looking people only. Clothing, cars and houses are all the same. The whole of society is dominated by an intense monotony, with no sense of esthetics. Athletes, artists, academics and workers all share the same of lifestyle. Houses are constructed like shelters for livestock, and clothing is tailored like a pelt to keep off the cold.

- The system is founded totally in the material concept of "labor and production." What is most important is not an individual citizen's qualities, but the contribution he can make to society. The ideal person is a hardworking laborer or hardworking villager. The guiding idea is that "production strengthens the herd." No attention is paid to humans' moral values, intentions, or spiritual condition.

- Seeing life as a struggle of existence, this way of thinking has no problem with doing away with the weak. On the contrary, this is regarded as necessary. Just as there is a brutal struggle for survival among animals, everyone considers himself first, and so there is no advance-

The eastern side of the Berlin wall before it was torn down. With its barbed wire, mines and tanks, the wall was a symbol of Communist despotism.



ment. Because human beings lack compassion, society cannot possibly attain peace and well-being. Lack of compassion and mercy coupled with fear for the future, cause hopelessness and pessimism to dominate.

- Due to "herd psychology," people from the lowest to the highest live in a constant state of fear and quickly react fearfully to everything. They fear the man at the door wearing an overcoat; they fear being called before the authorities. But the source of their fear is not clear, and no one can define it.

- In place of the fear of God, there are various "fear centers." In the Soviet Union, for example, the KGB (and secret services like Cheka and NKVD before it) tried to instill mortal fear throughout society. Millions can be sent to their deaths without trial or defense. The conviction that these organizations hear and see everything dominates citizens' minds. Such organizations develop a system of selective cleansing, based on the law of the jungle.

- Because fear of God is lacking, individuals repress their deepest urges insofar as they fear the system. If the system did not detect or

could not punish, they would commit thievery, corruption, bribery, embezzlement and every kind of illegal act.

- Anxiety, fear and panic occasioned by the environment they live in put people under stress. They cannot sleep at night and in the daytime, everything makes them anxious. They quickly lose bodily strength. Intense pressure and difficult living conditions exhaust men and women at an early age and sometimes cause their premature death. Because of hopelessness, they cannot enjoy the good things in life, but tranquilize themselves with alcohol and live their hellish lives in a state of intoxication.

- Believing that they will perish after death, people hold on to life tenaciously. In their struggles for life, they regard everyone else as a rival, if not an enemy, and begrudge every act as a slight against themselves. They experience socialism's basic tenets, such as "mutual aid" and "support," only in slogans. In fact, everyone regards others with a suspicion that condemns them to a life of loneliness.

- Because the individual has no faith in God, he can't attach himself to anyone in a meaningful, trusting relationship. The Darwinist-Communist system always crushes individuals, who are hostile to one another, since everyone may at any moment take away what they have. In a Communist state, the only one an individual can trust is himself. But because he knows he is weak, he doesn't trust even himself and is dominated by intense hopelessness. Therefore, he is forever complaining about his life, but cannot try to change it.

- Because people in a Communist society have closed minds, there are defects in every aspect of their lives, whether at school, at home, or in entertainment. They can act only in accord with what they've been taught, and so cannot come up with any original ideas to deal with new issues that confront them. If they do, in fact, they are answered with violence.

- Unthinking people have unorganized minds and can't use resources productively. They waste resources on utopian fantasies, as in the case of Lysenko.

- Communism destroys families, the basic unit of society. There are no marriages in the true sense of the word, only reproduction and prop-

agation. Marriage is not entered into for the sake of morality; its purpose is the continuation of the species. Families do not look after their children; the state or those appointed by it perform this function. A child is seen as a new addition to the herd and is trained to fight for it and protect it. Because the mother hates her home and environment, she passes her harshness on to her offspring. Children growing up deprived of family love become pessimistic and aggressive. In the place of love and respect in the home, hostility reigns. The child has no one to trust.

- In a society with no concept of marriage, fidelity, or chastity but only a mating mentality, prostitution becomes widespread.

- The police-state oppression controlling Communist society cannot take the place of conscience and the fear of God. For this reason, the crime rate soars; thievery is rampant everywhere. People steal from factories, farms and cooperatives collectively as a matter of course.

- However much Communist ideology may claim otherwise, racism is widespread in Communist society. In the Soviet Union, for example, there was antipathy to anyone who was not Russians, especially Muslims. Adopting the racist Darwinist theory in every aspect, Russians regarded various Muslim minorities and other minorities as "ethnic groups that were not completely evolved" and subjected them to mass slaughter, under the name of deportation. Communist ideology thinks of murder as "natural dialectic"—a natural component of evolution.

- Communism sees human beings only as productive animals. It reserves a special hatred and loathing for villagers. Marx called villagers inferior "potato sacks." As we saw earlier, Lenin and Stalin murdered millions by deliberately letting them starve. To them, villagers were only herds of animals that produced grain and cotton. Confiscating what they produced (collectivization) was seen as legitimate and reasonable as collecting the honey from the beehives.

These generalizations are only a broad sketch of a society without religion. In nations where disbelief prevails, no matter what they call themselves, this way of life must unavoidably prevail. People are not respected as worthy beings whom God created and endowed with spirit. With people regarding one another as advanced animals that will perish with death, a society cannot experience well-being, peace, security, co-

THE DARWINIST-COMMUNIST ESTABLISHMENT CONTINUES TO SUPPRESS THE RUSSIAN PEOPLE

Because a Darwinist-Communist State regards human beings as animals, it neither respects nor trusts them. Accordingly, it establishes an environment of fear, oppression, false danger and terror in order to control them. It views everyone with suspicion, regarding them as guilty and potential traitors. In such a state, a person need not commit a crime, only to be suspected, in order to be punished, brutalized, or killed.

The enemy is the great justification for terror, and the totalitarian state needs enemies to survive. **If it lacks them, it invents them.** Once they have been identified, they are treated without mercy . . .

Being an enemy is a hereditary stain that cannot be removed. . . . **Communism is no different. It demands the repression (or in moments of crisis, the elimination) of the bourgeoisie as a class. Belonging to the class is enough: there is no need actually to have done anything at all.**¹

These words of Lenin are important for understanding the attitude of a Communist State towards its people:

In reality, the state is nothing but a machine for the suppression of one class by another. Dictatorship is rule based directly on force and unrestricted by any laws. **The revolutionary dictatorship of the proletariat is rule won and maintained through the use of violence by the proletariat against the bourgeoisie, rule that is unrestricted by any laws.**²

As Lenin stated in his own words, the Darwinist-Communist Soviet regime did not trust its own people and regarded them as worthless animals—thus, it caused the death by torture or starvation of tens of millions and plunged the nation into decades of terror and darkness. Today's Russian people are still enduring anguish for the same reasons, because there are still certain officials within the Russian State mechanism who maintain a Communist mentality, regarding a person as an animal or valueless object.

An event that took place in the year 2000 in Russia is a proof of this and shows once more the dark side of the Darwinist-Communist mentality inherited from the Soviet period. After a submarine sank, for a long time Moscow did not try to rescue those on board. For reasons of supposed "state security," not until much later was the disaster announced to Western nations that could have given assistance. Russia knowingly abandoned its sailors to death, and a Russian mother reacting to this horror was given an injection and sedated by security forces. This is a striking instance revealing that the Stalinist mentality still holds sway over the Russian state authorities.

THEY FELL VICTIM TO THE KGB

KGB kafasına kurban gittiler



KGB TACTICS INHERITED FROM THE SOVIETS

Sovyet mirası KGB taktikleri



1- Tzvetan Todorov, *L'homme dépaycé*, Paris, Le Seuil, 1995 p. 33 (emphasis added)

2- Lenin: "The Proletarian revolution & The Renegade Kautsky"; Selected Works in 3 Vols, Moscow; 1964; Vol 3. p.75 (emphasis added)

operation or brotherhood. No one considers anyone else's comfort, health, or well-being. Moreover, in such societies removed from religion, it is impossible to find just administrators and people who work on behalf of all. Everyone looks out for his own interests and tries to profit as much as he can.

In a society where the moral values of the Qur'an are observed, however, everyone values one another as servants of God. No one desires any reward from doing good. On the contrary, they perform good works continually and, in their efforts, try to win God's approval. They hope for a good life in the Hereafter, confident that "those who enjoy charity, or what is right, or putting things right between people . . . seeking the pleasure of God," will be given "an immense reward." (Qur'an, 4:114) They do so, not with any expectation of gaining profit from others; but look for their reward only from God.

In the Qur'an (76:8-10), God describes this exemplary moral state:

They give food, despite their love for it, to the poor and orphans and captives: "We feed you only out of desire for the Face of God. We do not want any repayment from you or any thanks. Truly We fear from our Lord a glowering, calamitous Day."

Conclusion

Mental conservatism, which is communism's fundamental imposition, is the main impediment to a society's development of arts and science. If a particular nation is continually conditioned by narrow ways of thinking, prohibitions and restrictions, then its art and science will become paralyzed. In order for art and science to develop, people must be broadminded, looking at the world with new horizons.

Some interpret the conservatism that impedes art and science wrongly and try to attribute it to religion. But the true religion taught in the Qur'an is totally against this conservatism, bigotry and repressiveness, and affords the widest and freest horizon of thought. It frees them from all anxiety, other than the fear of God. Art, science, and thought develop to their greatest heights where people think deeply as urged by the Qur'an, using their minds to consider the universe, and what they

encounter in nature. Moreover, religion establishes an understanding of service to God, giving people great pleasure, excitement and desire for producing art, advancing science, and generating ideas. For this reason, the Islamic world's first centuries were truly a great Golden Age.

But Communism, establishing a totally rigid political and social system, destroyed people's faith in God, thereby destroying their pleasure in living together with a reality that gave meaning to their lives. Marxism's oppression and constraints rooted out art, science, and investigative thought and hacked them to pieces.

In various far eastern countries, there are examples of Communism that let us see this in a far more striking way.

CHAPTER IV



One of the millions of victims
of Mao's guerilla war.

RED TERROR IN ASIA



Though born in Europe, Communism's first revolution took place farther east, in Russia. In the first half of the 20th century, it moved even farther to eastward until 1949, when China—the world's populous country—fell to guerillas led by Mao Tse-tung. For ten years, Mao's militants engaged in attacks against government forces across China to bring about the world's second largest Communist revolution. The results of this second revolution were the same as in the original Bolshevik revolution: criminal assaults, mass murders, torture, famine, impoverishment, degeneration, resulting in an introverted, depressed society of fear.

After Lenin, Mao brought the second important change to Communist theory, bringing innovations to Marxism in three important areas:

1) Marx and the Communist ideologues following him laid great importance on the idea of the "**working class**" proletariat. But Mao believed that the peasant class was the true leaders of the revolution and proposed the idea of "peasant socialism."

2) Instead of following Lenin's idea of a Communist party demonstrating in city centers to prepare the way for revolution, Mao established a "**guerilla war**" and organized a Communist party based in the countryside and in the mountains.

3) In place of the movement toward internationalism, the foundation of Marxism that Lenin adopted, Mao favored nationalism and developed the idea of "**National Socialism.**"

The reason behind these three different approaches was the conditions in which Mao found himself. In China, where almost the whole population was composed of peasants with a conservative, nationalist frame of mind, Mao had no other choice than to establish "nationalist peasant socialism." Unavoidably, Mao gave priority to the peasants, applied the model of the "country guerilla," and organized among the peasantry.

This explains not only why Maoism was different from Leninism in terms of methods, but also why it became an even more savage, barbarous and rigid ideology. The advent of Maoism added to Communism—which was already pitiless and bloodthirsty—a greater degree of ignorance, fanatic nationalism and hostility to culture and civilization. Total calamity was the result. Maoism was the worst kind of Communism; in fact we can say it was the worst of the worst.

That being said, however, in conclusion, the ultimate goal of both Leninism and Maoism is to ensure the dominance of communism. There are merely methodical differences between the two in accordance with the socio-cultural and geographical conditions of the countries and the regions where this goal is aimed.



Chinese Communism developed and came to power with Stalin's support. But Red China's brutality was worse than Stalin's.

Maoism influenced not only China but later passed to Cambodia (in the time of the Khmer Rouge), North Korea, and even Albania. Maoism gained power with Stalin's help, and Soviet-Chinese relations were very good in Stalin's day. But this relationship fell apart in the 1960s, and the two countries became enemies. Sino-Soviet rivalry divided the Communist world, separating allies of China from those allied with the Soviet Union.

What Maoism brought upon China, and those Communist countries that followed China, was as dark and bloody as the Russia of Lenin and Stalin. But as the "worst of the worst," Maoism created much more terrible regimes.

In the following pages, we'll examine the red savagery that embraced Asia.

Darwin's Visit to China

Communism is really a European ideology, first proposed by European philosophers and put into effect for the first time by European activists. It's really nothing more than the result of the materialist hostility towards religion that took root in Europe. It is curious that this ideology reached and took root in an isolated country like China, so distant from Europe in every way. But if we look at China's recent history, a familiar pattern emerges: Communism came to China right after atheism spread in the country. And atheism is equivalent to Darwinism.

Until the end of the 18th century, China was an inward-looking society, isolated from Western culture. The coming of English merchants in the 19th century, brought many changes to the country. With them, these merchants brought a substance called opium, unknown in China before. Consumption of opium spread like an epidemic in Chinese society and was the cause of two wars between England and China. Finally, England preponderated over China. Hong Kong and other important Chinese cities fell under English influence.

In this way, English imperialism entered China and with it, came Darwinism that gave imperialism scientific support. In the 19th century, the materialist and Darwinist ideas that had dominated Europe began

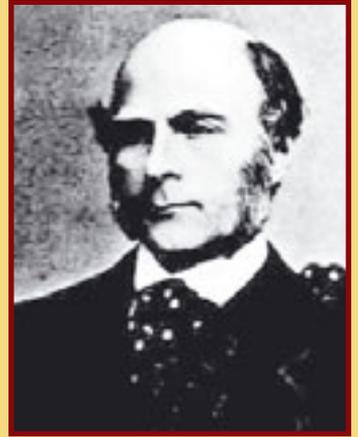
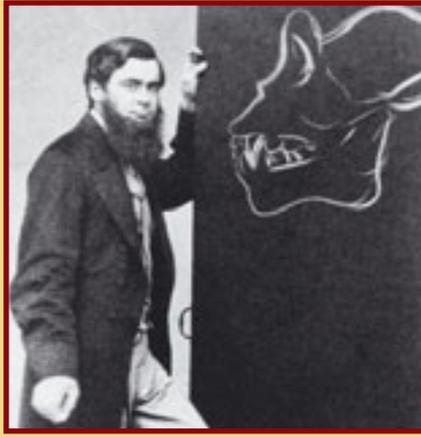
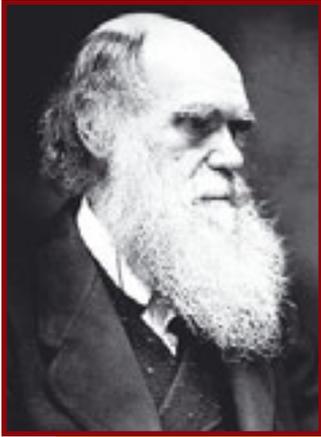
spreading quickly among Chinese intellectuals. In *The Encyclopedia of Evolution*, Richard Milner writes:

During the 19th century, the West regarded China as a sleeping giant, isolated and mired in ancient traditions. Few Europeans realized how avidly **Chinese intellectuals seized on Darwinian evolutionary ideas** and saw in them a hopeful impetus for progress and change. According to the Chinese writer Hu Shih (*Living Philosophies*, 1931), when **Thomas Huxley's book *Evolution and Ethics*** was published in 1898, it **was immediately acclaimed and accepted by Chinese intellectuals**. Rich men sponsored cheap Chinese editions so they could be widely distributed to the masses.⁶⁶

Just as young Turks were captivated by Western materialist ideas at the end of the Ottoman period, so in China, ideologues appeared who adopted materialism and Darwinism. As a result, the Chinese Empire that had lasted thousands of years was abolished in 1911 and replaced by the Republic of China. Those who founded the republic, no matter how anti-Western their rhetoric and policy may have been, adopted the same racist and Social Darwinist understanding that had justified Western imperialism. In an article in the American magazine *New Republic*, senior editor Jacob Heilbrunn writes:

The idea of using Western ideas and inventions against the West was at its zenith in those days. In the wake of the famous May 4, 1919, demonstrations in Beijing, calls for modernity and patriotism, science and democracy, gained currency among intellectuals. ..."Lurking behind the scenes," as Tu Wei-ming [a professor of Chinese History and Philosophy] has pointed out in the winter 1996 issue of *Daedalus*, "was neither science nor democracy but scientism and populism.... [I]nstrumental rationality and Jacobin-like collectivism fundamentally restructured the Chinese intellectual world in the post-May Fourth period." **Reformers, such as Liang Qichao, who edited a clandestine journal, were influenced by a debased but popular version of Darwin and Spencer. They saw race war as the key to progress.**⁶⁷

The racist thinker Herbert Spencer, mentioned in the quotation above, was a contemporary of Darwin, whose theory he adapted to social science. Among other violent, unjust and cruel ideas, Spencer pro-



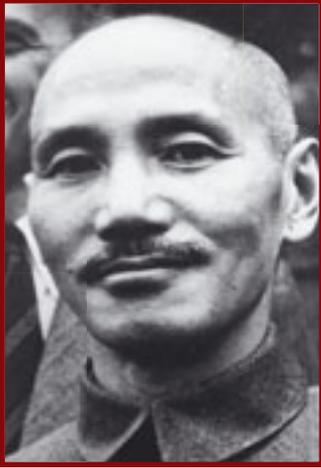
Darwin, Huxley and Galton were three influential evolutionists who led some of the Chinese intellectuals to Fascism and Communism.

posed the superiority of the European races and the need for continual conflict among races and nations, suggesting that society should not assist its poor and weak members.

Among Chinese intellectuals influenced by Darwin and Spencer were **Yen Fu** and **Ting Wen-chiang**, whose ideas greatly influenced the foundation of modern China. In *Chinese Communism and the Rise of Mao*, the American historian Benjamin Schwartz emphasizes Yen Fu and his Darwinist ideas significantly. According to Schwartz, Yen Fu takes the Western ideologies and theories he reads such as Spencer, and sees them as prescriptive ways to transform society and achieve the goal of wealth and power.⁶⁸ Schwartz states that **Darwin's theories do not merely describe reality. They prescribe values and a course of action.**⁶⁹

Ting Wen-chiang was another important Chinese ideologue and leader in Communism, whose views were founded on nothing other than Darwinism. Ding was the most important representative of the "**New Culture**" movement that influenced China in the 1910s and '20s. This movement's most important feature was its opposition to Confucianism, the religion of the Chinese people, and its seeking to replace it with a materialist world view. (Ironically, the New Culture movement was a leading inspiration of both Mao's Communism and its rival, Chiang Kai-Shek's Fascism.)

COMMUNISM IN AMBUSH



Darwinism fostered Communism and Fascism in China. Fascist leader Chiang Kai-Shek was influenced by Darwinism.

In *Ting Wen-chiang: Science and China's New Culture*, the American historian Charlotte Furth examines Ting Wen-chiang, the dean of the New Culture movement, in considerable detail. According to her, **Wen-chiang merely translated the ideas of evolutionist ideologues such as Darwin, Huxley and Spencer into Chinese.** For this reason, Furth even refers to Ding as the "**Huxley of China.**"⁷⁰ (Huxley, Darwin's biggest supporter, was known in his day as "Darwin's bulldog.")

Ting Wen-chiang studied zoology and geology at Glasgow University in Scotland. Returning to China in 1911, he exerted great efforts to spread materialist and Darwinist ideas in the newly-founded Chinese Republic, **even supporting the theory of eugenics proposed by Francis Galton, Darwin's cousin.**⁷¹ (Eugenics proposed the disposal of those within a race who were sick or disabled, thus ensuring so-called universal advancement by the "mating" of the healthy ones. This theory was applied most widely in Nazi Germany.)

James Reeve Pusey, a Harvard professor of history and an important commentator on the New Culture movement, says:

The New Culture Movement's cries were all cries Darwin had backed before, and he now backed them again in the same old way. He [Darwin] was the patron saint of the New Culture Movement. . . . [H]is theory, so the New Culture Movement's leaders still insisted, "proved" . . . that "the present surpasses the past, and the future surpasses the present." That was **the faith behind the Anarchists' injunction to *tsun chin po ku* (respect the present and belittle the past) and the Communists' later injunction to *hou chin po ku* (extol the present and belittle the past).**⁷²

As a result of the spread of Darwinism in China, the emergence of this kind of Chinese ideologues at the beginning of the 20th century gave birth, first, to the Chinese nationalist Kuomintang party with its fascist tendencies, then to Chinese Communism. In an article written in the periodical *New Scientist*, Michael Ruse, a Canadian philosopher wrote:

These ideas took root at once [In China], for China did not have the innate intellectual and religious barriers to evolution that often existed in the West. Indeed, in some respects, **Darwin seemed almost Chinese!** ...Taoist and Neo-Confucian thought had always stressed the "thingness" of humans. Our being at one with the animals was no great shock... Today, the official philosophy is Marxist-Leninism (of a kind). But **without the secular materialist approach of Darwinism (meaning now the broad social philosophy), the ground would not have been tilled for Mao and his revolutionaries to sow their seed and reap their crop.** ⁷³

"China And Charles Darwin"

Darwinism's influence on 20th century China was so great that the famous Harvard historian, James Reeve Pusey, devoted a book entitled *China and Charles Darwin* to this one subject. In this book he relates how Darwin's *Origin of Species*, published in England and translated into Chinese 36 years later in 1895, spread with extraordinary speed among Chinese intellectuals, with immense social and political effects. in the preface to his book, Pusey writes:

"The weaker go down before the stronger" – After 1895, the Japanese-Chinese translation of the famous Spencerian slogan, "the survival of the fittest," *yu sheng lieh pai* (the superior win, the inferior lose), ...was to force its way into a thousand essays and dominate for a time the Chinese editorial mind as the argument for almost any course of action. ⁷⁴

In the same book, Pusey examines the currents of thought developing in China in the first half of the 20th century and tells how they established the foundation for Maoism. One of the people he considered was Liang Chi-chao, was a

In *China and Charles Darwin*, Harvard University historian James Reeve Pusey explained that Darwinism had great influence in China and prepared the foundation for both Communist and Fascist ideas.



well-known writer of the time who was captivated by Darwinism and materialist philosophy.

He [Liang Ch'i-ch'ao] mentioned idealism and materialism at least as early as the October 16, 1902 issue of the *Hsin min ts'ung pao* [a Chinese journal]. Probably he had mentioned them somewhere before, for he gave no explanation of their meaning, and yet **he did imply that materialism was the better and that it was winning out over idealism, thanks to Darwin. "How great," he wrote, "is the world of the last twenty-four years, a world belonging to the theory of evolution. Materialism has arisen and idealism has cowered in a corner..."**⁷⁵

China and Charles Darwin relates how Darwinism was responsible for establishing China's disputatious revolutionist culture and its great influence on bringing Maoism to power:

Darwin helped inspire a true renaissance of Chinese thought by specifically challenging (or seeming to challenge) certain favorite traditional ideas and by discrediting all ancient authority...**But it was cut short—by the early imposition of a neo-orthodoxy, the Thought of Mao Tse-tung.**

That "**imposition,**" of course, also owed much to Darwin. For Darwin had **legitimized violent change and revolution.** Surely that was one of the most momentous things Darwin did to China... At any rate, those Chinese who were convinced that China needed rebellion were desperately in need of some legitimizing theory, for without the Mandate of Heaven rebellion for three thousand years had been one of the two cardinal sins (the other being filial impiety). It was that powerful sense of sin that Mao Tse-tung, Wu Chih-hui, Sun Yat-sen, and even Liang Chi'i-ch'ao combated so strenuously in all their Darwinian protestations that revolution was legitimate. Mao Tse-tung finally claimed that Marxism-Leninism could all be boiled down to one sentence, *tsao fan yu li*—"To rebel is justified" ...[That expression] meant that rebellion was a natural law, and that lesson had been taught to Mao Tse-tung not by Marx but by Sun Yat-sen and Liang Ch'i-ch'ao, who had learned it, rightly or wrongly, from Darwin.

Darwin justified revolution and thereby helped **the cultural revolutions of Liang Ch'i-ch'ao, Hu Shih and Mao Tse-tung** (and, of course, so many others), and **the political revolutions of Sun Yat-sen, Chiang K'ai-shek, and Mao Tse-tung....**

...Marxism **converted intellectuals—but intellectuals who were already converted to Darwinism.** If the intellectual Marxists were the "prescient," the hsien chih hsien chueh, who awakened the masses, China's earlier Social Darwinists, Yen Fu, Liang Ch'i-ch'ao, Sun Yat-sen, Li Shih-tseng, Wu Chih-hui, were the "prescient" who awakened the Marxists...

The question remains, "**In fitting China for Marxism and the Thought of Mao Tse-tung, what did Darwin do to China?**" This question must be asked.⁷⁶

His analysis clearly shows how Darwinism became the basis of Chinese Communism. For thousands of years, China had been an isolated empire. In a matter of ten years it became Red China, and the motive power behind this change in thinking was Darwinism.

But what did Darwinism do to prepare China for Maoism?

How did Mao Become a Communist?

Up to now, we've examined the change in ideas that prepared China for Maoism. But a personal dimension of this also needs to be examined: Mao himself.

Mao Tse-tung was born in 1893 to a family in a southern China village. From his childhood he always wanted to see Beijing and imagined living there. At age fifteen, he began to read young people's magazines published in the capital, and especially liked *New Youth*, a publication of the New Culture movement. This magazine was filled with articles by Darwinist ideologues such as Yen Fu and Ting Wen-chiang.

In 1918, Mao visited the city he always wanted to see. There he made friends with Yang Changzhi, a teacher from Beijing University who recognized the young man's talent and got him a job at the university library. Mao began his job of cataloguing and dusting the books and cleaning the rooms. He became friends with Li Dazhao, the director of the library, whose articles in *New Youth* he had read and liked. Li Dazhao had Communist ideas; for this reason, the university library became known as the Red Room. Chinese Communist theoreticians often met there, where Mao heard the names of Marx, Engels and Lenin for the first time.



A Chinese Communist propaganda poster.

But the man who brought the young Mao to embrace Communism was not from Beijing. After spending a few months at the Beijing library, Mao went to Shanghai and met **Chen Duxiu**, a classical scholar and a friend of Li Dazhao who had made a special study of Darwin.⁷⁷ This Communist leader's most striking feature was that **he was an ardent Darwinist. He can be considered as China's most important advocate of Darwinism and became Mao's most important tutor. Years later, Mao was to say, "He had influenced me more than anyone else."**⁷⁸

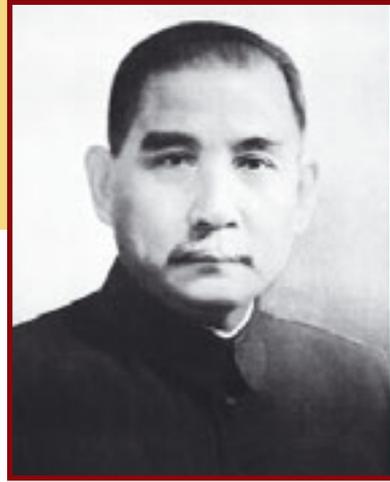
In her book *Mao*, Clare Hollingworth, a historian at the University of Hong Kong said that **Mao was greatly influenced by the Darwinist views of Chen Duxiu** and even in the 1970s he looked back nostalgically to the studies of Darwin he did in his youth.⁷⁹

Chen Duxiu educated Mao in the scientific aspects of Darwinism; on the political level, he was influenced by Sun Yat-sen, the Chinese leader of the time. Interestingly, Sun Yat-sen, regarded as the founder of modern China and of the Kuomintang (the Nationalist Chinese Party), was also a Darwinist. In an article in *The New Republic*, the American researcher Jacob Heilbrunn writes:

...[I]t was the great Chinese revolutionary and nationalist Sun Yat-sen who decisively influenced Mao. Sun held that the Chinese had to embrace nationalism in order to defeat the Western powers, and he **preached a doctrine of political Darwinism:** "although natural forces work slowly, yet they can exterminate great races."



After reading Darwin, Mao became an ardent Communist.



He inherited Darwinist ideology from Sun Yat-sen.

As a young organizer for the communists in Hunan in the early 1920s, Mao supported Sun, who was the patriarch of the Kuomintang (KMT). Sun created a temporary alliance between his nationalist party and the communists, and, in 1926, Mao was even briefly given control of the KMT's propaganda department.⁸⁰

Brainwashed by the ideas of Darwin and Marx, Mao became an active, passionate Communist from 1920 onward. With eleven friends who thought as he did, he founded the Communist Party in Shanghai in 1921. Afterward, he strengthened the Communist Party by various alliances, skirmishes, guerilla battles and propaganda. For a while, the Communists under Mao cooperated with the Nationalist Party, but in the second half of the 1920s, each side became hostile to the other. Mao relocated his militants in Jiangxi province in southern China and there formed a "liberated zone" outside the central authority.

The struggle between the two sides lasted for years. After World War II, the Communist "liberated zone" continued to grow, to the point that it encompassed almost all of China. In 1949, Mao and his Communists entered Beijing and proclaimed the "People's Republic of China." With this, the world witnessed the second Communist Revolution after the Bolshevik Revolution in 1917—a second revolution at least as bloody as the first.



After a bloody revolution, Mao announced the establishment of the People's Republic of China.

The "Great Leap Forward" and the Great Famine

Until 1949, Mao had conducted a long guerilla war, organizing a campaign in the countryside and in the mountains against the central administration, which controlled the large cities. In order to do this, he established good relations with the villagers, promising them land and freedom and assuring them that once Communism was established in China, they would enjoy great prosperity and happiness. The peasants believed him and supported him and his guerillas.

But after Mao came to power, everything changed. In the first years after the revolution, he wanted to take over the whole of China and set up Communist authorities in every area. In the meantime, thousands were arrested as "class enemies" and hanged in public. In the mid-fifties, Mao designed a system similar to Stalin's collectivization and put it into effect in 1958. This was called the "**Great Leap Forward**," but all it succeeded in doing was to bring torture and a great famine upon the Chinese people.

The Great Leap began with slogans about doubling all of China's agricultural and industrial production. Working hours were increased, and machines worked endlessly. Workers weren't permitted to inspect



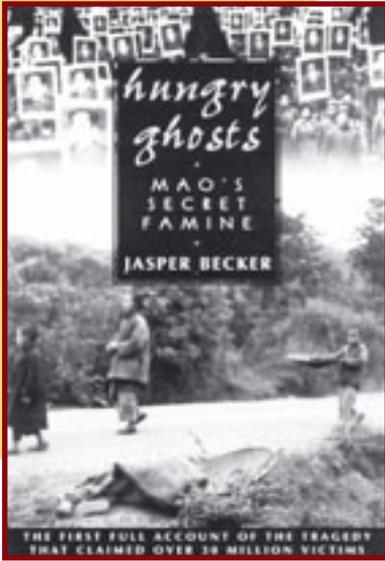
A Red Chinese propaganda poster: Communist ideology—begun by Marx and Engels, continued by Lenin and Stalin—was finally taken over by Mao. What Marx and Engels actually transmitted to Lenin, Stalin, and Mao was Communism's "well of bloodshed." Lenin and Stalin murdered 50 million people; Mao, 60 million.

or repair the machines, and within a short time they began to break down.

Agriculture suffered disaster from lack of intelligent planning. With the idea that the "abolition of private property would increase production," all peasants were forced to surrender their land to cooperatives. The confiscations of Stalin's Russia were repeated. Moreover, Mao punished peasants in some parts of China for not accepting collectivization voluntarily. Their punishment was being starved to death.

Within a short time, the Great Leap disintegrated into a great famine. Like the famine that Stalin fabricated in the Ukraine, this famine was also man-made. *The Black Book of Communism* comments on China in the period of the Great Leap:

The fact that the famine was primarily a political phenomenon is demonstrated by the high death rates in provinces where the leaders were Maoist radicals, provinces that in previous years had actually been net exporters of grain... Like Mao himself, Party activists in Henan were convinced that all the difficulties arose from the peasants' concealment of private stocks of grain. According to the secretary of the Xinyang district (10 million inhabitants), where the first people's commune in the country had been established, "The problem is not that food is lacking. There are sufficient quantities of grain, but 90 percent of the inhabitants are suffering from ideological difficulties." In the autumn of 1959 the class war was momentarily forgotten, and a **military-style offensive was launched against the peas-**



Mao's "Great Leap Forward" was a senseless, cruel project that paralyzed the county's agriculture and economy. Over 30 million died of starvation. In *Hungry Ghosts: Mao's Secret Famine*, Jasper Becker—who was the Beijing bureau chief of the *South China Morning Post*—gave a detailed account of the famine.

ants, using methods very similar to those used by anti-Japanese guerrilla groups. At least 10,000 peasants were imprisoned, and many died of hunger behind bars. The order was given to smash all privately owned cutlery that had not yet been turned to steel to prevent people from being able to feed themselves by pilfering the food supply of the commune. **Even fires were banned, despite the approach of winter.** The excesses of repression were terrifying. **Thousands of detainees were systematically tortured, and children were killed and even boiled and used as fertilizer**—at the very moment when a nationwide campaign was telling people to "learn the Henan way." In Anhui, where the stated intention was to keep the red flag flying even if 99 percent of the population died, cadres returned to **the traditional practices of live burials and torture with red-hot irons.**⁸¹

Mao began with the slogan of "peasant socialism." Before coming to power, he'd promised Chinese peasants land, food, and protection. But his power subjected them to levels of pain and torture never to be seen in modern history:

This campaign took on the proportions of **a veritable war against the peasantry...** Deaths from hunger reached over 50 percent in certain villages, and in some cases the only survivors were cadres who abused their position. In Henan and elsewhere there were many cases of cannibalism (63 were recorded officially): children were sometimes eaten in accordance with a communal decision.

The death rates across the country reached immense levels:

For the entire country, the death rate rose from 11 percent in 1957 to 15 percent in 1959 and 1961, peaking at 29 percent in 1960. Birth rates fell from 33 percent in 1957 to 18 percent in 1961. Excluding the deficit in births, which

In the years of the Great Leap, many Chinese who resisted Mao's savagery were brutally executed.

Many were killed by a bullet to the back of the head.



was perhaps as many as 33 million (although some births were merely delayed), loss of life linked to famine in the years 1959-1961 was somewhere **between 20 million and 43 million people...**This was quite possibly **the worst famine not just in the history of China but in the history of the world.** ⁸³

In the course of the Great Leap, an eighteen-year-old Red Guard, who was pursued by the authorities and took refuge with his family in a village in Anhui, described Maoism's cruel face:

We walked along beside the village. The rays of the sun shone on the jade-green weeds that had sprung up between the earth walls, accentuating the contrast with the rice fields all around, and adding to the desolation of the landscape. Before my eyes, among the weeds, rose up one of the scenes I had been told about, one of the banquets at which **the families had swapped children in order to eat them. I could see the worried faces of the families as they chewed the flesh of other people's children.** The children who were chasing butterflies in a nearby field seemed to be the reincarnation of the children devoured by their parents. I felt sorry for the children, but not as sorry as I felt for their parents. What had made them swallow that human flesh, amidst the tears and grief of other parents—flesh that they would never have imagined tasting, even in their worst nightmares? **In that moment I understood what a butcher he had been, the man "whose like humanity has not seen in several centuries, and China not in several thousand years": Mao Zedong. Mao Zedong and his henchmen, with their criminal political system, had driven parents mad with hunger and led them to hand their own children over to others, and to receive the flesh of others to appease their own hunger.** Mao Zedong, to wash away the crime that he had committed in assassinating democracy, had launched the



A Communist Party militant delivering Communist propaganda in the years of the Great Leap.

Great Leap Forward, and obliged thousands and thousands of peasants dazed by hunger to kill one another with hoes, and to save their own lives thanks to the flesh and blood of their childhood companions. They were not the real killers; the real killers were Mao Zedong and his companions.

84

The Influence of "Evolutionist Science" in Mao's Famine

In the years between 1958 and 1961, as a result of Mao's Great Leap policy, all of China suffered what's accepted as the greatest, most deadly famine in history. It is estimated that as a result, as many as 40 million died. (Such numbers equaled and even surpassed the entire population of many countries of that time.)

What was the cause of this disaster? As mentioned above, Mao's militants forced the peasants into collectivization and founded communes of between 100 and 300 families—which greatly reduced agricultural productivity. In some areas, Maoist administrations punished peasants with deliberate starvation.

Another important reason for this calamity is that Mao tried to adapt to Chinese agriculture the "Lysenko model" applied in the Soviet Union in the 1930s and 40s. When he forced these experiments on the peasants, the result was huge losses in agricultural production.

We examined Trofim Lysenko before. As a result of the nonsensical "**proletarian science**" of the Stalin era, Soviet biology was entrusted to Lysenko, an ardent evolutionist. Lysenko rejected the science of genetics adopting instead a theory by Lamarck, a leading Darwinist who be-

lieved in the "inheritance of acquired traits." When Lysenko's myth was applied to Soviet agriculture, the losses were immense.

But Mao did not learn from this disaster of the Stalinist period—on the contrary he and his supporters, educated from their youth on a strict Darwinism, continued to believe in "proletarian science" and to distort real science, according to the requisites of the theory of evolution. The Great Leap imitated Lysenko's model, and Chinese peasants were forced to perform agriculture according to principles of "evolutionist science."

Jasper Becker, Beijing bureau chief of *South China Morning Post*, in his book entitled *Hungry Ghosts: Mao's Secret Famine*, relates in detail the Lysenkoist agricultural enterprise put into effect during the Great Leap. These attempts, each of which resulted in a separate disaster, were:

Close Planting: Lysonko, thinking that seeds evolve by adapting to their habitat, declared that planting seeds very close together would create "socialist solidarity" among them. The Maoists undertook to apply this myth. Until that time, in Southern China, about 1.5 million seeds were sown on any one acre of land. In 1958, the Communists ordered this amount to be increased to between 6 and 7 million seeds. In 1959, they again increased the amount, to between 12 and 15 million. As a result, a very large number of seeds went to waste, and agricultural production suffered a severe decline.

Deep Plowing: One of Lysenko's assistants, Teventy Maltsev, claimed that deep plowing would allow plants to establish better root systems. Chinese Communists adopted and applied this Lamarckist claim. During the Great Leap, Chinese peasants were ordered to plow their fields to a depth of 1.5 meters. As a result, tens of millions of peasants were forced to spend months hoeing. Again, the outcome was great loss of production, resulting in famine.

The Sparrow Hunt: Mao initiated a campaign to eliminate various species of animals that damaged agricultural production. Sparrows became the main target of this campaign. Special methods were employed to hunt and kill sparrows throughout the whole of China. But as a result, there was an explosion in the number of insects and other pests that the

sparrows had been eating, and they damaged agricultural production much more than the sparrows ever had.

Agriculture Without Fertilizer:

Following Lysenko's recommendations, Chinese Communists stopped using chemical fertilizer. (It was imagined that when seeds were deprived of fertilizer, they would "evolve" by adapting to this new situation thus ensuring the same yield without the use of fertilizing additives.) This experiment caused yet another great loss in agricultural production.

All these initiatives, relying as they did on Lysenko's myth of evolution, caused the greatest famine in history. But although millions were dying of starvation, no one dared criticize the regime or the calamity it caused. One individual, General Peng Dehuai, the defense minister, wrote Mao a letter in which he tried to describe this disastrous famine. Later he was accused of being a "rightist" and was eliminated. During the famine, **official reports all falsified the situation by saying that brilliant results had been achieved in agricultural production. Moreover, in order to convince the world of this lie, China exported vast amounts of grain.** While people were dying of starvation in some areas of the country, grain and rice were being kept in warehouses, later to be exported.⁸⁵

Later, the same agricultural policy was put into effect in Communist Cambodia and North Korea, with the same results: a great lack of productivity, famine and mass death. Blindly and without awareness or intelligence, Communists applied Lysenko and Stalin's "Communist leap in agriculture," because the theory of evolution at the base of their materialist philosophy demanded it.



A propaganda poster for the Great Leap depicts Mao as an agricultural genius in a rich field. However, Mao's reliance on and implementation of Lysenko's methods resulted in an agricultural disaster.

Mao's Darwinist Tyranny

The theory of evolution is closely related to all the disasters Mao brought upon China. As we have seen, the great famine of 1958-61 resulted from the application of Lysenko's model of "evolutionist science." Meanwhile, Mao and the Communist establishment ruled China with terrible cruelty and mercilessness. What kind of horrifying thinking lies behind a policy that deliberately leaves people to starve and forces them into cannibalism?

No doubt this relates to the whole Communist view of human nature. Earlier, the idea that human beings are animals lay at the basis of Soviet terror, and the same applies to China was mentioned. With Darwinist prejudice, Mao viewed those opposed to Communism as "animals" and so, Maoists were not at all touched by the anguish of people they regarded as a herd. To them, this was a logical, normal operation of nature. After revealing how low harvest levels had fallen in the Great Leap, *The Black Book of Communism* gives Mao's view in this regard:

Mao, in the tradition of Chinese leaders, but in contradiction to the legend that he encouraged to grow up around him, showed here **how little he really cared for what he thought of as the clumsy and primitive peasants.**⁸⁶

James Reeve Pusey also stresses Mao's Darwinist philosophy: "**The thought of Mao Tse-tung was and remains a powerful mixture of Darwinian ironies and contradictions.**"⁸⁷ Elsewhere, he writes:

Mao Tse-tung in an angry moment (as late as 1964) swore that "all demons shall be annihilated." **He dehumanized his enemies**, partly in traditional hyperbole, **partly in Social Darwinian "realism."** Like the Anarchists, **he saw reactionaries as evolutionary throwbacks, who deserved extinction.** The people's enemies were non-people, and they did not deserve to be treated as people.⁸⁸

Whoever views humans as animals has no qualms about performing experiments on them. During the Great Leap, new ways of nutrition were considered and mercilessly tested on people who were starving:

In 1960, after one year of famine, ...the survivors were reduced to searching through horse manure for undigested grains of wheat and eating the worms they found in cowpats. People in the camps were used as guinea pigs in hunger experiments. In one case **flour was mixed with 30 percent**

paper paste in bread to study the effects on digestion, while in another study marsh plankton were mixed with rice water. The first experiment caused atrocious constipation throughout the camp, which caused many deaths. The second also caused much illness, and many who were already weakened ended up dying.⁸⁹

The "Great Leap" was actually a kind of experiment in natural selection. Mao forced the Chinese into the most difficult conditions in order to eliminate the weak and those opposed to Communism. On the one hand, he tried to brainwash the peasants by starving them so as to make them dependent on him and the Communist organization. This basis of this attempt was Darwinism. At the same time as he began the Great Leap, Mao also initiated a "leap in education." The dialectical materialism and Darwinism played the main roles in this education campaign. In a speech from this period, Mao revealed the principles supporting his savagery when he said, **"The foundation of Chinese Socialism rests on Darwin and the theory of evolution."**⁹⁰

Immediately after the Great Leap, on January 30, 1962, Mao explained the parallels between the Chinese Communist Party and Darwin in a speech delivered before members of the Party:

In history doctrines of natural scientists such as Copernicus, Galileo and Darwin were for a very long period not recognized by the majority of people, but instead were thought to be incorrect. In their time they were in the minority. When our Party was founded in 1921 we only had a few dozen members; we were also in the minority, but these few people represented the truth and represented China's destiny.⁹¹

In these words, Mao compared his party's efforts to Darwin's enterprise and expressed his respect and admiration for him. At first, he stated, few accepted his Communist Party's ideas, just as few people accepted the theories of Darwin. But that would not change the validity of either man's ideas.

But just as in Darwin's case, Mao's ideas were all myths.

In the Great Leap, between 30 and 45 million people died because of the famine. Many peasants who resisted collectivization died of torture. Tens of thousands, because they showed the slightest negative attitude towards Communism, were labeled "class enemies," arrested and

tortured. Chinese prisoners were treated like animals and finally executed.

In these prisons, the savagery of Chinese Communism was especially evident.

Mao's Prisons

Mao's China had totally become a society of fear. The majority of the millions accused of an offence, even with no concrete evidence of a crime, were arrested and imprisoned as opponents of Communism. Later they were executed in huge ceremonies held in the open squares of large towns. An estimate of between 6 and 10 million people were unjustly killed on Mao's directives. About 20 million "counter-revolutionaries" spent a great part of their lives in prison as enemies of the state. But as *The Black Book of Communism* says, living in these prisons was often worse than death:

Up to 300 in cells of 100 square meters, and 18,000 in Shanghai's central prison; starvation-level rations and overwork; inhuman discipline and a constant threat of physical violence (for instance, people were beaten with rifle butts to make them keep their heads high, which was obligatory when marching.) The mortality rate, which until 1952 was certainly in excess of 5 percent per year—the average for 1949-1978 in the *laogai*—reached 50 percent during a six-month period in Guangxi, and was more than 300 per day in one mine in Shanxi. **The most varied and sadistic tortures were quite common, such as hanging by the wrists or the thumbs.** One Chinese priest died after being interrogated continuously for 102 hours. The most brutish people were allowed to operate with impunity. One camp commander assassinated or **buried alive 1,320 people in one year**, in addition to carrying out numerous rapes. Revolts, which were quite numerous at that time (detainees had not yet been ground into submission, and there were many soldiers among them), often degenerated into veritable massacres. Several thousand of the 20,000 prisoners who worked in the oil-fields in Yanchang were executed. In November 1949, 1,000 of the 5,000 who mutinied in a forest work camp were buried alive.⁹²

Nien Cheng, a former inmate of a Shanghai prison, describes the

physical violence in the Chinese prisons:

To put those special handcuffs tightly on the wrists of a prisoner was a form of torture commonly used in Maoist China's prison system. Sometimes **additional chains were put around the ankles of the prisoners. At other times a prisoner might be manacled and then have his handcuffs tied to a bar on the window so that he could not move away from the window to eat, drink or go to the toilet.** The purpose was to degrade a man in order to destroy his morale . . . Since the **People's Government claimed to have abolished all forms of torture, the officials simply called such methods "punishment" or "persuasion."**⁹³

This savagery's main purpose was to instill fear, first in opponents of the regime and then in society in general. Another goal was to destroy people's personalities, to dehumanize and "bestialize" them by fear and torture. By these methods, Mao wanted to turn of China's entire population into a herd of animals he might control.

The important turning point that gave life to Mao's totalitarian project was China's "Cultural Revolution."

The Cultural Revolution: China's Communal Folly

Following the disaster of the Great Leap, Mao announced that he was "high above daily politics." He decided to withdraw from matters of state to concentrate on so-called "greater and more important issues." Mao's silence ended in 1966. He announced that the Chinese revolution had not yet achieved success because he, the "great helmsman," had not completely instilled Communism in people's minds; that even in the highest echelons of the state, there were elements who did not understand Communism. A cultural revolution was needed to correct this situation.

The shock of the Cultural Revolution was to destroy the whole Chinese state and society. Mao's suggestions had great influence on the ignorant youth in the low ranks of the Communist Party. They became known as the Red Guards and began wreaking terror in all parts of the country. Singing "The East is Red," they marched through the streets, ready to display their aggression and arrest everyone they thought was

anti-Communist. Thousands of high-level bureaucrats, university professors, scientists and intellectuals were arrested, humiliated after undergoing horrible tortures, and executed.

Even Liu Shaoqi, one of Mao's closest friends and a former chairman of the People's Republic of China, was arrested on Mao's orders, publicly beaten, subjected to long torture and thrown into a cell where he received no medical attention and died in agony. Deng Xiaoping was one of Mao's oldest comrades, among those who were going to take over the rule of China after Mao. His son Pufong, a brilliant physics major at Beijing University, was interrogated by the Red Guards. During the process, he was sodomized, beaten to a pulp, and later thrown out the window of the interrogation chamber. Although he survived, his back was broken and he spent the rest of his life in a wheelchair with an impaired hearing.

A witness describes the inhuman torture inflicted on a university professor during the Cultural Revolution:

On the athletic field and farther inside, before a new four-story classroom building, **I saw rows of teachers, about 40 or 50 in all, with black ink poured over their heads and faces** so that they were now in reality a "black gang." Hanging on their necks were placards with words such as "reactionary academic authority so-and-so," "corrupt ringleader so-and-so," "class enemy so-and-so," "capitalist roader so-and-so": all epithets taken from the newspapers. On each placard was a red cross, making the teachers look like condemned prisoners awaiting execution. They all wore dunce caps painted with similar epithets and carried dirty brooms, shoes, and dusters on their backs.

Hanging from their necks were pails filled with rocks. I saw the principal: the pail around his neck was so heavy that the wire had cut deep

The Cultural Revolution was a murderous frenzy designed to destroy every idea and every person opposed to Communist ideology. The propaganda poster on the right depicts this feast of bloodshed: anti-Communists being crushed by the fists of Red Communists.





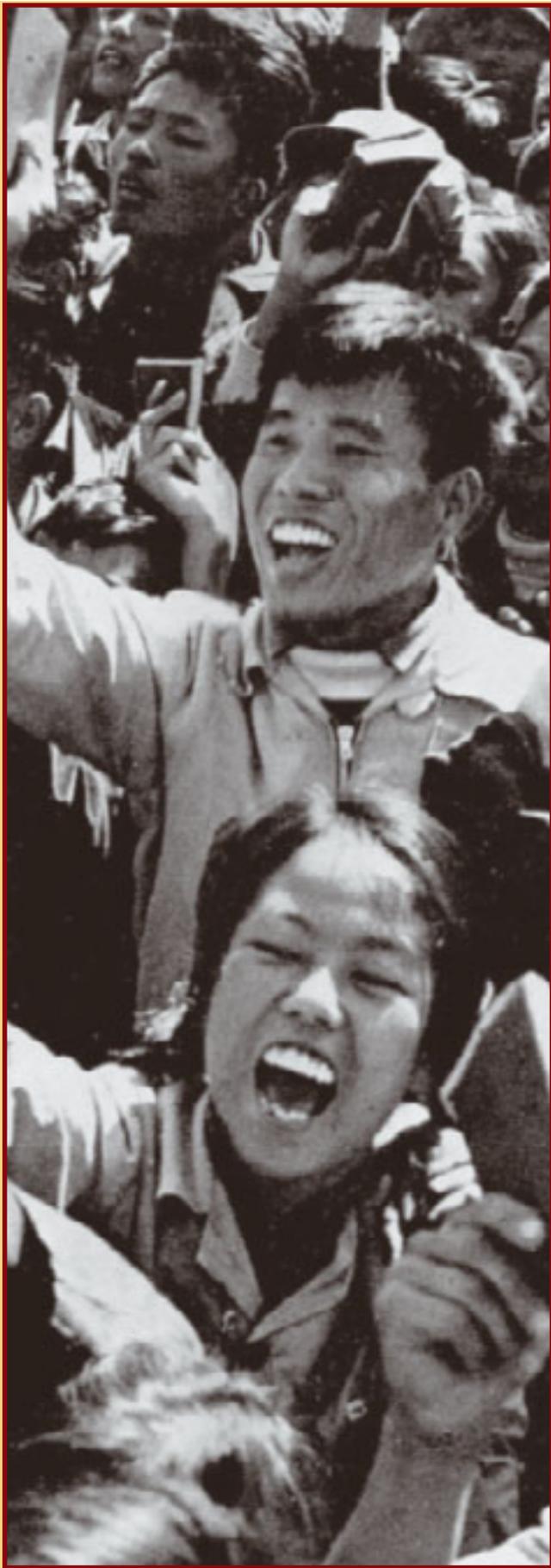
THE CULTURAL REVOLUTION: A MADNESS THAT TERRORIZED CHINA

The Red Guards recognized Mao's Red Book as their only guide. During the Cultural Revolution, they overwhelmed the country with blood and fear.

Propaganda posters also depicted the Red Guards' barbarism. In the poster at top, university professors, arrested and tortured by the Red Guards, are depicted as parasites that degenerate society.



Young members of the Red Guards brain-washed by Mao's Communism.





UNIVERSITY PROFESSORS BEING EXECUTED

Throughout the Cultural Revolution, Red Guards tortured tens of thousands. University professors, statesmen, artists and writers were arrested, and publicly humiliated with insulting placards hung around their necks, before being executed.



1



2



3



4



5

Another political execution in China: A woman named Wang Shouxin was arrested as an opponent of the regime, bound by soldiers, forced to her knees and killed with a single bullet. As a rule, the money to buy the bullet for executions like these was taken from the victim's family.

into his neck and he was staggering. **All were barefoot, hitting broken gongs or pots as they walked around the field crying out: "I am black gangster so-and-so."** Finally, **they all knelt down, burned incense, and begged Mao Zedong to "pardon their crimes."**

I was stunned by this scene and I felt myself go pale. A few girls nearly fainted.

Beatings and torture followed. I had never seen such tortures before: **eat-ing nightsoil** and insects, being subjected to electric shocks, **being forced to kneel on broken glass**, being hanged "like an airplane" by the arms and legs. ⁹⁵

The Cultural Revolution also applied the "**human bestialization**" policy implemented earlier under Lenin and Stalin. Opponents identified as "enemies of the people" were forced to imitate an animal in public. Some professors under arrest had their hands tied behind them and, after being thrown to the ground, were forced to "graze," pulling up grass with their teeth. In August 1967, the Beijing press declared that anti-Maoists were "rats that ran through the streets" and should all be killed.

The Cultural Revolution was a mass folly never before seen in the history of the world. The Red Guards arrested, tortured and executed tens of thousands for praying, just listening to music, or feeding a domestic animal. People were sent into a trance in which they supported every manner of savagery; they would shout their support as they watched people being murdered. *The Black Book of Communism* describes this savagery in these words:

The whole people were invited to public trials of "counterrevolutionaries," who almost invariably were condemned to death. Everyone participated in the executions,



In Red China, political executions were everyday occurrences. Many were accused of "not following Mao's way" and executed in the streets.



Another innocent Chinese executed during the Cultural Revolution.

shouting out ""kill, kill"" to the Red Guards whose task it was to cut victims into pieces. Sometimes the pieces were cooked and eaten, or force-fed to members of the victim's family who were still alive and looking

on. Everyone was then invited to a banquet, where the liver and heart of the former landowner were shared out, and to meetings where a speaker would address rows of severed heads freshly skewered on stakes. This fascination for vengeful cannibalism, which later became common under the Pol Pot regime, echoes a very ancient East Asian archetype that appears often at cataclysmic moments of Chinese history.

The Red Guards' only source book was the *Little Red Book* containing the words of Mao. Every one of them knew this book by heart; moreover, those who did not know it were denounced as "class enemies" and could be beaten or even executed on the spot. Even the most normal and legitimate activities could be declared "anti-Communist" and punished:

The Red Guards, who took themselves extremely seriously, thought it was a good idea to ban "wastes of revolutionary energy" such as cats, birds, and flowers. . . In big cities such as Shanghai, teams shaved the head of anyone caught in the streets with long or lacquered hair, tore up trousers that were too tight, ripped high heels off shoes, slit open pointed shoes, and forced shops to change their names. . . . Red Guards stopped passersby and forced them to recite their favorite quotation from Mao. Many people were afraid to leave their houses.⁹⁸

The Cultural Revolution reached such levels of insanity that finally the army had to intervene and reestablish order in the country. Throughout the 1970s China tried to bandage the wounds inflicted by the Cultural Revolution and repair its damage. Mao died in 1976, joining more than 60 million who were already dead, victims of torture, slaughter and benighted ideology.



Propaganda posters showed Mao as the red sun rising over China. In reality, Maoism brought famine and torture and made China a Darwinist arena in which "the weakest" died. Mao murdered 60 million. On the right, a photograph of him in the last years before his death.



China's Savagery in Occupied Countries

The scourge of Maoism was not limited to the Chinese people. Countries occupied by China or people forced to live under permanent occupation were also targets of Red brutality. One of these areas was the "Uyghur Autonomous Region" in the west of China; in other words, the **Uyghur Turks living in Eastern Turkistan**. Because these Turks were both Moslems and an ethnic minority, the Beijing administration targeted them and subjected them to systematic genocide from the time Mao came to power in 1949.

The Uyghurs were not allowed to perform their religious obligations. Schools and places of prayer were closed. In many areas, religious leaders were arrested and a large number of them martyred. Without taking any precautions, China carried out 46 nuclear tests in the Uyghur Autonomous Region, starting in 1964. As a result, cancer among Uyghurs has risen by a remarkable degree, with many children born dead or with physical defects.

To murder the Muslim Uyghur Turks, the Chinese employed various methods: Between 1949 and 1952, 2,800,000 Uyghurs died; between then and 1957, 3,509,000 died; between 1958 and 1960, the number was 6,700,000 and in the four years from 1961 to 1965, 13,300,000 Uyghurs were murdered. In eastern Turkestan, families were forbidden to have more than one child. Any woman who became pregnant in contraven-

tion of this law had her child aborted.

These measures, begun in Mao's time, are still in effect. As a result of forced migration, family planning and killings, the Uyghurs in Eastern Turkestan have become a minority. Due to the policy of assimilation in effect since 1949, the proportion of Muslims in the Uyghur Autonomous Region has fallen from 75% to as little as 35%. Today, more than 25 million Muslims in eastern Turkestan live under Chinese oppression. In an area where thousands of Muslim are political prisoners, many of those arrested are not heard from again.

Another country that fell under the Communist regime's brutality is Tibet, occupied by the Chinese army just one year after the establishment of a Communist regime. With the acquiescence of its people, Tibet became an autonomous region bound to China. But Chinese oppression of the Tibetans has gradually increased. The Chinese administration has obliged Tibetan peasants to sell their produce at very low prices, put Chinese immigrants in all of the country's important institutions, and answered the least resistance with a cruel and bloody response. The Dalai Lama, who for years has inspired Tibetan resistance to China, describes the brutality committed by Communist China on his people:

Tibetans not only were shot, but also were beaten to death, crucified, burned alive, drowned, mutilated, starved, strangled, hanged, boiled alive, buried alive, drawn and quartered, and beheaded.⁹⁹



International sources reported in detail China's brutality in eastern Turkestan. A special report published by Amnesty International stated that the goal was to eradicate the Uyghur Muslims through torture and execution. China has subjected Eastern Turkestan's Muslim Uyghur population to decades of genocide. As a result of nuclear tests deliberately conducted in the region, large numbers of children are born deformed.

THE SAVAGERY OF RED CHINA CONTINUES

COMMUNIST CHINA HAS SLAUGHTERED 210,000 INNOCENT PEOPLE IN NUCLEAR TESTS ALONE.

Komünist Çin, sadece nükleer denemelerde 210 bin masum insanı katletti



SAVAGERY IN CHINA
Muslims are killed and those who pray punished. Pregnant women are given injections to kill their babies.



As soon as a baby was born in China it was strangled by officials
BIRTH PLANNING BY MURDER

ANOTHER MASSACRE OF MUSLIMS IN CHINA
As the slaughter in East Turkestan goes on, the Chinese Army has now fired on Muslims living in the county of Shandong.



A state with a Darwinist-Communist way of thinking oppresses its fellow citizens and kinsmen, lets them starve and leads them into misery and poverty, and murders them—all for its own advantage. To Russia and China, two modern examples of this brutal concept of the State, what is important is not the people's comfort and well being, but the strengthening of their own rule.

Towards the end of the year 2000, a newborn baby was taken from its family by Chinese officials and strangled while the family watched. Similar atrocities continue to be committed against Muslims in Chinese-occupied Eastern Turkestan. The starting point for this brutality lies in Darwinism's doctrine that human beings are animals unworthy of respect, that life is a field of struggle. To be rid of all this horror, and in order for people to live in peace and well-being, this Darwinist ideology must be wiped out.

Cambodia—the Pinnacle of Communist Insanity

Communism, already a pitiless, contentious, cruel and bloodthirsty ideology, reached its worst expression of advanced brutality in Maoism. To understand more clearly why Maoism's "traditional" Far Eastern brutality was joined to Communism, we must look at another example from the Far East—the **Cambodian regime of the Khmer Rouge**, which came to power with Chinese support and adopted Maoist methods.

Cambodia, a small and poor country, is located between India and China. This region is also called Indo-China. For centuries the majority of its people eked out a living by agriculture, whose principal element is the rice paddies throughout the country. But between 1975 and 1979, these rice paddies became "killing fields." About three million people in this country of nine million were murdered. Some were shot in the head, others had their skulls crushed by axes, or left to starve. Still others were smothered with plastic bags put over their heads.

The perpetrators of this unparalleled brutality were the Cambodian Maoists, or the Khmer Rouge, a Communist party founded and led by a Maoist by the name of Pol Pot. For years the Khmer Rouge had been organizing in Cambodia's forests and dreaming of coming to power. Finally in 1975, their dream came true. They established a regime that was more cruel and totalitarian than Stalin's Russia or Mao's China—a pinnacle of Communist insanity.

For the good of the country, the party decided that a Communist's sole duty was to work in the rice paddies as much as possible. Cambodia's entire population was forced to work in those fields. Tens of thousands living in the cities—statesmen, bureaucrats, teachers, intellectuals—were driven to the villages and made to work on collective farms under very severe conditions. To avoid work, say prayers, or even to eat the smallest piece of food from what was being collected without permission was regarded as "rebellion against the state," and under this pretext, people were killed every minute.



Pol Pot, leader of the Khmer Rouge, murdered three million Cambodians.

The Khmer Rouge called their party Angkar, and to the millions of people working themselves to exhaustion in the fields gave the impression that "Angkar is always watching you." A Cambodian who managed to escape the Khmer Rouge brutality describes those who lived in the so-called "democratic" Cambodia:

In Democratic Kampuchea, there were **no prisons, no courts, no universities, no schools, no money, no jobs, no books, no sports and no pastimes** . . . There was no spare moment in the twenty-four-hour day. Daily life was divided up as follows: twelve hours for physical labor, two hours for eating, three hours for rest and education, and seven hours for sleep. We all lived in an enormous concentration camp. There was no justice. **The Angkar regulated every moment of our lives** . . . The Khmer Rouge often used parables to justify their contradictory actions. **They would compare people to cattle: "Watch this ox as it pulls the plow. It eats when it is ordered to eat.** If you let it graze in the field it will eat anything. If you put it into another field where there isn't enough grass, it will still graze uncomplainingly. It is not free, and it is constantly being watched. And when you tell it to pull the plow, it pulls. It never thinks about its wife or children..."

100

Obviously, the Khmer Rouge put into effect the "human bestialization" project that lay at the base of Communism. As the above quote shows, people were forced to be like oxen plowing a field. At the same time, much importance was given to eradicating such concepts as religion and morality. *The Black Book of Communism* describes the measures the Khmer Rouge took to destroy the love between the family institution and its members:

The regime did all it could to break family ties, which it saw as a threat to the totalitarian project of making **each individual totally dependent on the Angkar**. Work teams had their own houses, which were often simply barracks or collections of hammocks or mats for sleeping located near the village. It was very difficult to get permission to leave these compounds, and **husbands and wives were often separated for weeks or longer. Children were kept from their extended families**, and adolescents sometimes went six months without seeing their parents. **Mothers were encouraged to spend as little time as possible with their children**. Because the postal service had stopped altogether, it was sometimes months before people learned of the death of a relative. Here again the example came from



The Khmer Rouge came to power after a bloody civil war. These photos were taken during the bloody civil war as the Khmer Rouge attacked the capital, Phnom Penh. This was the harbinger of terrible brutality.

above, as many of the leaders lived apart from their wives or husbands.

101

These measures are actually nothing more than Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels' interpretation of the origin of the family, put into action. Marx and Engels viewed human beings as animals evolved from monkeys, for whom concepts of religion, morality and family were not necessary. These were "superstructure institutions" that came to be as the result of economic relations. A Communist society promised to destroy these concepts. So the Khmer Rouge's project was nothing else than to put life into the nonsense proposed by Marx and Engels.

The Khmer Rouge wanted to destroy the religion and the family, bestialize human beings and make them like "oxen that plough the fields". Khmer Rouge once again applied measures used earlier by Lenin, Stalin, and Mao by deliberately letting people go hungry, thereby destroying their wills and personalities. Later, after being fed by Angkar, they would come to worship the Khmer Rouge as so-called gods:

The hunger that crushed so many Cambodians over the years was used deliberately by the regime in the service of its interests. The hungrier people were, the less food their bodies could store, and the less likely they were to run away. **If people were permanently obsessed with food, all individual thought, all capacity to argue, even people's sex drive, would disappear.** The games that were played with the food supply made forced evacuations easier, promoted acceptance of the collective canteens, and also weakened interpersonal relationships, including those between par-

ents and their children. Everyone, by contrast, would kiss the hand that fed them, regardless of how bloody it was. ¹⁰²

A Cambodian witness stated:

This hunger was deliberately caused. Even while many died of hunger, only one fifth of the fields suitable for sowing was put into production! ¹⁰³

For the regime, death by starvation was no problem, it was a goal. Khmer Rouge leaders often said, "All we need to build our country is a million good revolutionaries. No more than that. And would rather kill ten friends than allow one enemy to live." ¹⁰⁴

The hostility to "love, beauty, aesthetics and culture" that had showed itself in Mao's Cultural Revolution reached the point of insanity with the Khmer Rouge. Anyone who combed his hair, took a little care in his appearance, or even wore glasses was regarded as an "enemy of the people." The excerpt below is taken from a speech made by the director to the prisoners in a Khmer Rouge camp:



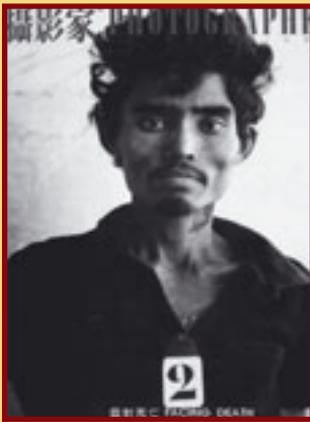
After the Khmer Rouge took power, nearly the whole population of Phnom Penh was forced to leave the city.



The people were driven into the country to work the fields.



In a few days, the capital turned into a ghost town.



VICTIMS OF KHMER ROUGE BRUTALITY

The Khmer Rouge attached numbers to some of those they were about to execute and took their photographs. Thousands of mass graves were found in the Khmer Rouge's "killing fields." The bones in the photo on the right belong to Cambodians suffocated with plastic bags over their heads.

In Democratic Kampuchea, under the glorious rule of Angkar, **we need to think about the future.** We don't need to think about the past. You New People must forget about the pre-revolutionary times. Forget about the cognac, forget about fashionable clothes and hairstyles...

We don't need the technology of the capitalists. **We don't need any of it at all. Under our new system, we don't need to send our children to school. Our school is the farm. We will write by plowing.** We don't need to give examinations or award certificates. Knowing how to farm and how to dig canals—those are our certificates.

We don't need doctors any more. They are not necessary. If someone needs to have their intestines removed I will do it. It is easy. There is no need to learn how to do it by going to school.

We don't need any of the capitalist professions! We don't need doctors or engineers. We don't need professors telling us what to do. They were all corrupted. **We just need people to work hard on the farm!**

And yet, comrades, there are some naysayers and troublemakers who do not show the proper willingness to work hard and sacrifice! Such people do not have the proper revolutionary mentality! Such people are our enemies! And, comrades, some of them are right here in our midst!

These people cling to capitalist ways of thinking! They cling to the old capitalist fashions! We have some people among us who still wear eyeglasses. And why do they use eyeglasses? Can't they see me? If I move to slap your face and you flinch, then you can see well enough. People wear them to be handsome in the capitalist style. They wear them because they are in vain. We don't need people like that any more. **People who think they are handsome are lazy! They are leeches sucking energy from others!** ¹⁰⁵

The Maoist psychopaths who seized Cambodia with China's support murdered almost three million innocents. At first, those to be killed were shot in the head. Later, however, this was decided to be a "waste of bullets," so more brutal methods were resorted to. Besides "saving bullets," these methods were preferred so that Khmer Rouge militants could satisfy their sadism. Fifty-three percent of victims had their skulls crushed with iron bars, axe handles, or sometimes hoe handles; six percent were hanged or asphyxiated with plastic bags, and five percent had their throats slit.

In 1979, the Khmer Rouge regime came to an end when Vietnam occupied Cambodia. To show the brutality of the earlier regime, the Vietnamese dug up the rice paddies known as the "killing fields," exhumed the bodies, and put them on display. The bones and skulls of all the thousands killed by the Khmer Rouge are now on display in a museum in the capital, Phnom Penh.

Communism, which found its "scientific" foundation in a book by Charles Darwin, took shape from the nonsense of Marx and Engels, became a world power through the brutality of Lenin and Stalin, reached its pinnacle of madness under Mao, and showed its real face to the world in the savagery practiced in Cambodia.

North Korea and Vietnam

In Asia, Communist brutality was not limited to China and Cambodia. The regime of North Korea also inflicted merciless terror on its own people. An estimated 1.5 million were killed under the dictatorship of Kim Il-sung. Hundreds of thousands were subjected to torture in North Korea's terrible prisons. *The Black Book of Communism* describes how prisoners were treated like animals:

In her penitentiary, some 6,000 people, including 2,000 women, worked as slave labor from 5:30 a.m. until midnight, manufacturing slippers, holsters, bags, belts, detonators, and artificial flowers. **Any detainees who became pregnant were brutally forced to have abortions. Any child who was born in the prison was smothered or had its throat cut.** ¹⁰⁷

A camp guard who fled to Seoul describes the torture and executions inflicted in the concentration camps of North Korea:

Who carried out the executions? The choice was left to the discretion of security agents, who shot when they did not want to dirty their hands or killed slowly if they wished to prolong the agony. I learned that people could be beaten to death, stoned, or killed with blows from a shovel. Sometimes the executions were turned into a game, with prisoners being shot at as though they were targets in a shooting competition at a fair-ground. Sometimes **prisoners were forced to fight each other to the death and tear each other up with their bare hands . . .** With my own eyes, I saw

several atrocious deaths. Women rarely died peacefully. I saw breasts slashed with knives, genitals smashed in with shovel handles, necks broken with hammers . . . In the camps, death is very banal. And political criminals do whatever they have to do to survive. They do anything to get a fraction more corn or pig fat. Even so, every day four or five people would die in this camp, of hunger, by accident, or through execution. ¹⁰⁸

Another characteristic of the North Korea's Communist regime was its adoption and cruel implementation of **the eugenics theory, which was another product of Darwinism**. As we saw earlier, eugenics was proposed by Darwin's cousin Francis Galton, and appeared as a scientific enterprise at the beginning of the 20th century. The aim of eugenics is to sterilize people who are sick, disabled, or of a particular race and to have healthy people reproduce. It was imagined that in the end, this process would bring a healthier race into being. The first country to implement eugenics as an official policy was Nazi Germany. At first, Hitler gathered congenitally ill and disabled people into "sterilization centers," and later had them killed.

North Korea's Darwinist-Communist regime implemented this cruelty under the name of "accelerating evolution." *The Black Book of Communism* described eugenics, North Korean style:

Anyone who is handicapped in North Korea suffers terrible social exclusion. The handicapped are not allowed to live in Pyongyang. Until recently they were all kept in special locations in the suburbs so that family members could visit them. Today they are exiled to remote mountainous regions or to islands in the Yellow Sea. Two such locations have been identified with certainty: Boujun and Euijo, in the north of the country, close to the Chinese border. This policy of discrimination has recently spread beyond Pyongyang to Nampo, Kaesong, and Chongjin.

Similar treatment applies to anyone out of the ordinary. **Dwarves, for instance, are now arrested and sent to camps;** they are not only forced to live in isolation but also prevented from having children. **Kim Jong II himself has said that "the race of dwarves must disappear."** ¹⁰⁹

Vietnam was another bloody Communist dictatorship in Asia. North Vietnam carried on a long war first with the French and then with the Americans. In 1975 it took South Vietnam and formed a single united



**North Vietnam
under
Communist
rule, 1968**

Communist Vietnam. Ho Chi Minh, the founder of North Vietnam, and those who followed him did not hesitate to torture their own people and subject them to severe oppression. Between 1975 and 1977, a Vietnam writer opposing the regime wrote a letter in which he described the conditions of the country:

Conditions inside the prisons are unimaginably bad. In the Chi Hoa prison, the official Saigon prison, 8,000 people under the old regime were kept in conditions that were universally condemned. Today there are more than 40,000 people in the same prison. Prisoners often die from hunger, lack of air, or torture, or by their own hand... ¹¹⁰



**Ho Chi Minh, the
dictator of North
Vietnam.**

There are two sorts of prison in Vietnam: the official prisons and the concentration camps. The latter are far out in the jungle, and the prisoner is sentenced to a lifetime of forced labor. There are no trials, and hence no possibility of using a legal mechanism in their defense.

Similar instances of cruelty were suffered when Vietnam occupied Laos in 1975 and turned it into a Communist regime. The Pathet Lao Communists gained strength in this poor country in the middle of Indo-China and, after they came to power, subjected opponents of regime to oppression. As a result, tens of thousands became refugees.

The Maoist Danger Continues

Throughout its history, far-eastern Asia has been a scene of serious severe armed clashes, blood feuds, and savage acts of vengeance. With the advent of Communist ideology, which supported violence and regarded brutality as legitimate and even necessary, the result was disastrous. Communism turned the rice paddies into killing fields. In far-eastern Asia, moreover, its hostility to culture and civilization was even more marked. Its unthinking ideology rejected civilization in favor of ignorance, ugliness, and monotony.

Interestingly, many organizations and currents of thought would blindly adopt such a cruel and primitive ideology and spread it throughout the world. Today, a number of Maoist terror organizations and ideological groups are operating in various countries. Maoists claim that the collapse of the Soviet Union revealed the "failure of a false interpretation of Communism" and proved that Maoism is right. They close their eyes completely to Mao's brutality, crimes, famines and terrible acts of cruelty and try to argue that this benighted ideology is the only alternative for the world's future. Maoists organize particularly in underdeveloped countries, implementing their outmoded theory they call "**Third Worldism**," and try to seduce these countries into the darkness of Communism.

Clearly, these Maoists aren't satisfied with the tens of millions whom their namesake tortured to death. They want more bloodshed.

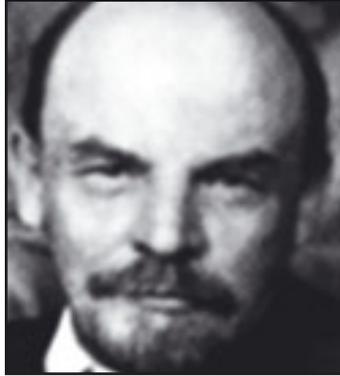
In this book's last section, we'll examine Maoism's subtle growth in greater detail.

CHAPTER V



Bolshevik militants tearing down the Georgievsky church in the city of Gorky.

COMMUNISM'S HOSTILITY TO RELIGION



In the Qur'an, it is revealed that throughout history, cruel and tyrannical leaders have arisen who have denied God and religion. In one verse (28: 41), God calls them "leaders summoning to the fire." This kind of character typified by the person of Pharaoh in various accounts about Moses in the Qur'an. There have been other cruel rulers who opposed Prophet Abraham and the Companions of the Cave (a group of believers recounted in the Qur'an) and who, just like Pharaoh, killed people simply for having faith in God. It's possible to find these tyrannical characters in every era of history. These leaders of irreligion have committed similar acts of cruelty against their societies, used the same methods in trying to alienate people from religion, and led the unwary to destruction in this world and the hereafter.

Looking at ideologies of the last century that have brought the most trouble, pain, cruelty and brutality, we find merciless and irreligious leaders at their head. Those 20th-century leaders who most resemble Pharaoh as described in the Qur'an are the bloodthirsty, irreligious leaders of the Russian and Chinese Revolutions, **Vladimir Lenin, Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse-tung** and the fathers of their ideas, **Karl Marx** and **Friedrich Engels**. **Charles Darwin** exercised leadership in irreligion in yet another way by his theory of evolution.

Communism's hostility to religion is beyond dispute. Look at the writings of any Communist ideologue, and you will find this expressed openly. Marx himself called religion the "opium of the people," described it as created by the ruling class to narcotize the poor, and proposed that religious belief must be destroyed if Communism were to advance. Engels wrote that human beings are descended from monkeys, claiming that religion developed as merely a stage in the process of evolution.

To destroy religion, what kind of policies do Communists implement? Lenin gave the first comprehensive answer. In 1900, as leader of the Russian Social-Democratic Workers' Party (later to become the Communist Party), he wrote an article titled "The Attitude of the Worker's Party to Religion," published in the *Proletary* magazine. In that article he wrote:

Social-Democracy bases its whole world-outlook on scientific socialism, i.e., Marxism. **The philosophical basis of Marxism**, as Marx and Engels repeatedly declared, is dialectical materialism, which has fully taken over the historical traditions of eighteenth-century materialism in France and of Feuerbach (first half of the nineteenth century) in Germany -- a materialism which **is absolutely atheistic and positively hostile to all religion**. Let us recall that the whole of Engels's *Anti-Dühring*, which Marx read in

manuscript, is an indictment of the materialist and atheist Dühring for not being a consistent materialist and for leaving loopholes for religion and religious philosophy. Let us recall that in his essay on Ludwig Feuerbach, Engels reproaches Feuerbach for combating religion not in order to destroy it, but in order to renovate it, to invent a new, "exalted" religion, and so forth. **"Religion is the opium of the people" -- this dictum by Marx is the corner-stone of the whole Marxist outlook on religion.** ¹¹¹

In 1905, he published an article entitled "Socialism and Religion" in the magazine *Nozvaya Zhizn* in which he called religion a "fog" that must be dispersed. In that article, he also de-



According to Lenin, Communists are responsible for translating and publishing the works of ardent opponents of religion like Feuerbach.

scribed the atheist propaganda that Communists must spread against religion:

Our Programme is based entirely on the scientific, and moreover the materialist, world-outlook. . . . **Our propaganda necessarily includes the propaganda of atheism; the publication of the appropriate scientific literature,** which the autocratic feudal government has hitherto strictly forbidden and persecuted, must now form one of the fields of our Party work. We shall now probably have to follow the advice Engels once gave to the German Socialists: **to translate and widely disseminate the literature of the eighteenth-century French Enlighteners and atheists.** ¹¹²

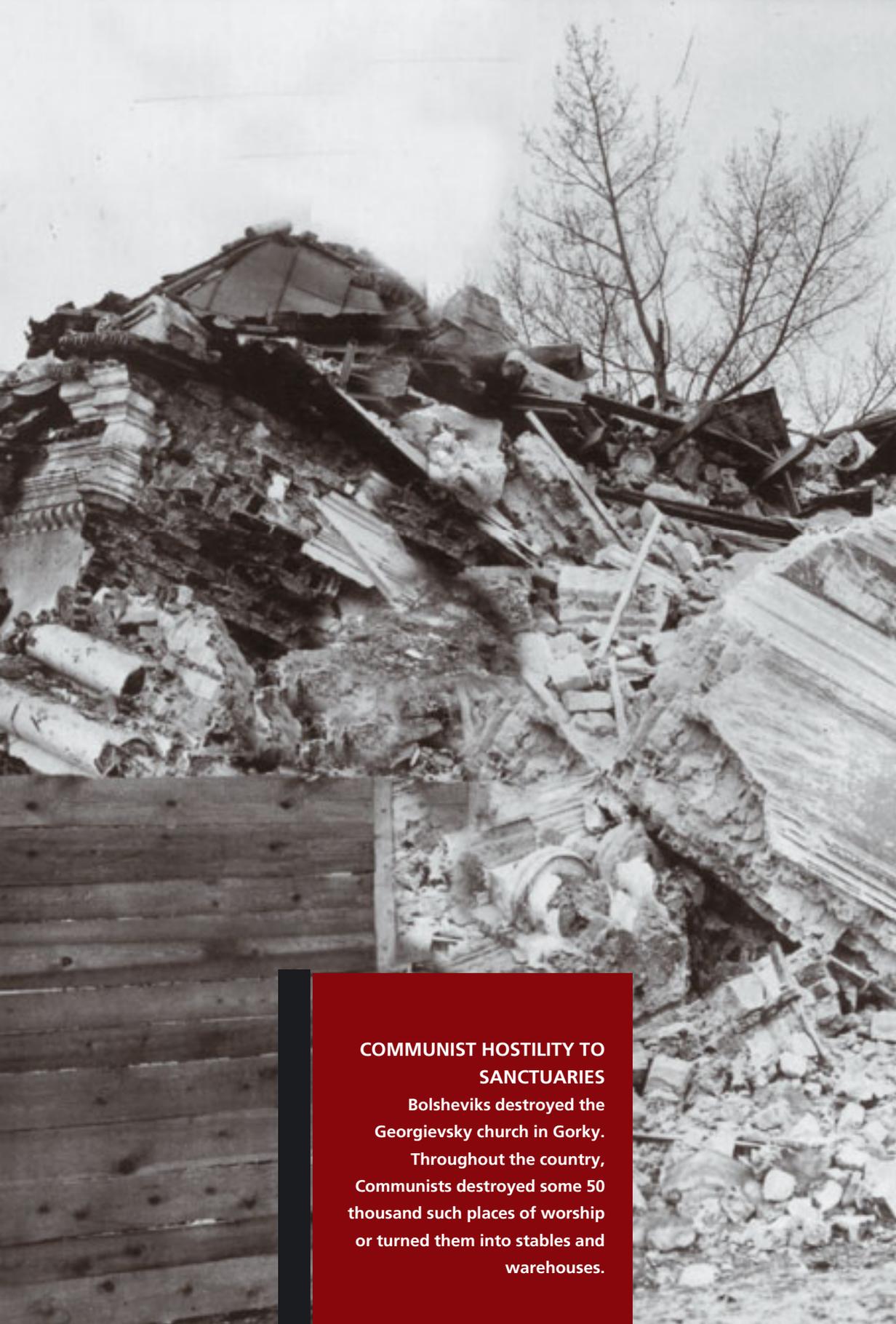
Note that Lenin said the battle Marxists much wage against religion has to start by disseminating "scientific literature" and the writings of the 18th-century Enlightenment atheists. "Scientific literature" means theories that impose materialism in the guise of science (such as Darwinism); and these "French Enlighteners" include Diderot and D'Holbach, who wrote materialist propaganda against religion long before Marx.

Among Communists, this method Lenin taught is still in use. If we examine certain publishing houses, scientific magazines and media institutions throughout the world, we clearly see that Marxists are behind publications that espouse Darwinist and Enlightenment philosophy.

Communism's Hidden Hostility to Religion

While Marxists are not in power, their currents of thought don't usually follow a definite aggressive policy against religion. It's even possible for some Communists to seem to show respect for religion and its adherents. What is the purpose for this moderation?

The answer to this question can be found among the writings of Lenin. In "The Attitude of the Worker's Party to Religion," he wrote that, starting with the interpretations and practices of experts like Marx and Engels, war must never be openly declared against religion. This was an unnecessary "gamble of a political war." Other materialists (for example, the anarchists or "bourgeois atheists") had voiced hostility to religion and initiated anti-religious campaigns. Lenin found their activities



**COMMUNIST HOSTILITY TO
SANCTUARIES**

Bolsheviks destroyed the
Georgievsky church in Gorky.
Throughout the country,
Communists destroyed some 50
thousand such places of worship
or turned them into stables and
warehouses.



simple and naïve. He rejected the accusations of "moderation" and "inconsistency" these people leveled against Marxists and stated that the "Marxist tactics in regard to religion are thoroughly consistent, and were carefully thought out by Marx and Engels."

Lenin continued this moderate stance until the Communists came to power in 1917. But after this, his moderation disappeared and replaced it with widespread oppression of religion and religious people throughout the Soviet territory. Earlier, Lenin had stated that Communists must not openly declare themselves to be atheists and must even accept believers in religion into their ranks. But once he came to power, he followed a much different path. In *The Harvest of Sorrow*, the American historian Robert Conquest describes some of the main points of Bolshevik religious policy:

Priests and clerics were declared, under another article (65) of the 1918 Constitution, to be 'servants of the bourgeoisie' and disfranchised. This involved their receiving no ration cards, or those of the lowest category; their children were barred from school above the elementary grade; and so on. A decree of 28 January 1918 forbade religious instruction in schools, though it was permitted to 'study or teach religious subjects privately.' This last was further restricted by a decree of 13 June 1921 which forbade the religious instruction anywhere of groups of persons below the age of eighteen. . . .

. . . A law of 8 April 1929 forbade religious organizations to establish mutual assistance funds; to extend material aid to their members; 'to organize special prayer or other meetings for children, youths or women, or to organize general bible, literary, handicraft, working, religious study or other meetings, groups, circles or branches, to organize excursions or children's playgrounds, or to open libraries or reading rooms, or to organize sanatoria or medical aid.' In fact, as an official comment put it, church activity was reduced to the performance of religious services.

On 22 May 1929, Article 18 of the Constitution was amended; instead of 'freedom of religious and anti-religious propaganda' it now read 'freedom of religious worship and anti-religious propaganda'; at the same time the Commissariat of Education replaced a policy of non-religious teaching in schools by orders for definitely anti-religious instruction. . . .

. . . Collectivization 'usually involved the closure of the local church as well'. Icons were confiscated as a matter of routine and burned along with other objects of religious worship. A confidential letter from the Western Provincial Committee on 20 February 1930 speaks of drunken soldiers and Komsomols [members of the Communist youth organization] who 'without mass preparation' were 'arbitrarily closing village churches, breaking icons, and threatening the peasants'.

The closures applied to all religions. . . .

. . . Moreover when churches were closed, this did not mean that religious work was permitted outside them. The closure of nine major churches in Kharkov was accompanied by a decision 'to take proper steps to prevent prayer meetings in private homes now that the churches are closed'.

The Kazan Cathedral in Leningrad was turned into an anti-religious museum. . . .

. . . The St Sophia Cathedral and other churches in Kiev were turned into museums or anti-religious centres. In Kharkov, St. Andrey's was turned into a cinema; another into a radio station; another into a machine-parts store. In Poltava, two were turned into granaries, another into a machine repair shop. . . .

. . . These measures applied to all religions. 'Churches and synagogues' is often the phrasing in official decrees in the European part of the USSR. Elsewhere Islam was equally persecuted. . .

. . . In the collectivization evangelical leaders in the villages were excluded from the kolkhozes and denounced as kulaks; and most of them were deported. ¹¹⁵

After the Bolshevik revolution, Lenin's tactic of "being moderate towards religion" turned into fanatical hostility. As we saw earlier, to Lenin, the famine of 1920-21 that cost millions of lives would weaken people's faith in God.

The following are some of the statements of Lenin that express his hatred and enmity against religion (we hold Almighty God above such statements):

... any religious idea, any idea of any god at all, any flirtation even with a god, is the most inexpressible foulness, ... for that very reason it is the most dangerous foulness, the most shameful 'infection'." ¹¹⁶

There can be nothing more abominable than religion. ¹¹⁷

We must combat religion—that is the ABC of all materialism, and consequently of Marxism. ¹¹⁸

... to be an atheist, which every socialist is... ¹¹⁹

Even the bare mention of a citizen's religion in official documents should unquestionably be eliminated. No subsidies should be granted to the established church nor state allowances made to ecclesiastical and religious societies. ¹²⁰

Lenin, with his rebellious spirit against God and religion, lost his mental balance and suffered great pain. God returned to Lenin in this world some of the cruelty he inflicted on people with his hostility to religion. The Qur'an (58:5-6) speaks of the terrible recompense that such cruel people will receive on the Last Day:

Those who oppose God and His Messenger will be subdued and overcome as those before them were also subdued and overcome. We have sent down Clear Signs. The disbelievers will have a humiliating punishment. On the Day God raises up all of them together, He will inform them of what they did. God has recorded it while they have forgotten it. God is a Witness of all things.

When Stalin rose to power, he was just as anti-religious as his predecessor. He displayed his hostility by killing millions of believers, destroying religious institutions and places of worship, and by initiating endless atheist propaganda. One of the most important weapons in Stalin's propaganda attack was the theory of evolution. In his autobiography, he wrote:

In order to disabuse the minds of our seminary students of the myth that the world was created in six days, we had to acquaint ourselves with the geological origin and age of the earth, and be able to prove them in argument; we had to familiarize ourselves with Darwin's teachings. ¹²¹

In the book *Anarchism or Socialism?*, Stalin pits Darwin against Cuvier, a creationist scientist and founder of the science of fossils. He writes, "**Marxism rests on Darwinism and treats it uncritically, i.e., the Marxists repudiate Cuvier's cataclysms.**" ¹²²

Nikita Sergeyeovich Khrushchev, who succeeded Stalin as the First

Secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party on September 7th, 1953, said while describing the struggle the communists were to wage against religion that they could alienate people from religion by carrying out "a substantial, effective and masterfully orchestrated **scientific, atheist propaganda.**" ¹²³

But Khrushchev's claim that "scientific propaganda will alienate people from religion" is one of the biggest delusions of communists. Science is the art of appreciating God's superior wisdom. The advancements in all the fields of science have shown people at every turn the undeniable truth that is Creation. It is for this reason that since the second half of the 20th century, the masses have flocked towards religion while the materialist Darwinist ideologies have sunken into history.

Maoism's Hostility to Religion

Mao, Leninism's and Stalinism's representative in China, nurtured hostility to religion and implemented it in his policies. One of his comments on religion he clearly displays his fanaticism:

... **[B]ut of course, religion is poison.** It has two great defects: It undermines the race . . . [and] retards the progress of the country. Tibet and Mongolia have both been poisoned by it. ¹²⁴

When Mao came to power, he instituted a war against religion and its practitioners. But this was done in "secret," as Lenin's Communists had done. The Communist party initiated a policy called the "Three self movement," meaning that all religious institutions must be structured so that they could be "self supporting, self administrating, and self organized." This policy appeared to be based on granting freedom of religion, but it was actually a campaign designed to destroy religion completely. All religious institutions and places of worship throughout the country—Confucian and Buddhist temples, mosques and Christian churches—came under the control of state controlled management bodies. Within a short time, these religious institutions became "Maoist propaganda centers." A statement given to the American International Commission on Religious Freedom on March 16, 2000 by a Chinese Christian by the name of Harry Wu says:

But because Mao Zedong could not allow any citizen of China to hold allegiance to any authority outside the Communist Party, under Mao these government-run bodies allowed no religious activity. Throughout the three decades that Mao ruled China, the organizations of the "three self movement" worked with the Chinese Communist Party to eliminate religion and to promote the ideology of the Communist Party. Maoism became China's only legal religion, and Mao's "Little Red Book" its primary religious text.¹²⁵

Both the Uyghur Muslims in eastern Turkestan and the Buddhists of Tibet became targets of bloody brutality. The Chinese Communist Party tried to control them by reducing their populations and destroying their religious beliefs. Other Communist regimes in Asia continued Mao's hostility to religion. In the genocide committed against their own people in Cambodia, the Khmer Rouge targeted the minority Cham community of Muslims with particular cruelty. *The Black Book of Communism* describes the brutality they inflicted against the Cham:

In 1973, mosques were destroyed and prayers banned in the liberated zones. Such measures became more widespread after May 1975. Korans were collected and burned, and mosques were either transformed into other buildings or razed. Thirteen Muslim dignitaries were executed in June, some for having gone to pray rather than attending a political rally, others for having campaigned for the right to religious wedding ceremonies. . . . The more fervent were all but wiped out: of the 1,000 who had made the pilgrimage to Mecca, only 30 survived these years. Unlike other Cambodians, the Cham frequently rebelled, and large number of them died in the massacres and reprisals that followed these uprisings. After mid-1978 the Khmer Rouge began systematically exterminating a number of Cham

A Chinese propaganda poster shows Albanian dictator Enver Hoxha with Mao.



An example of Communism's passion for large buildings: the Building of Council of Ministries in Moscow.



communities, including women and children. . . [It is calculated] that the overall mortality rate among the Cham was 50 percent. ¹²⁶

In Albania, Enver Hoxha's dictatorship, another Communist regime, displayed Maoism's hostility to religion. Albania came out of World War II as a satellite of the Soviet Union, but during the Sino-Soviet conflict of the 1960s, Albania sided with China and became the representative of Red Chinese Maoism in Europe. Enver Hoxha closed all places of worship (mosques as well as Catholic Churches in the north of the country) and even forbade people from worshipping in their homes. Declaring your belief in any religion became a crime, and those who disobeyed the prohibition were subjected to various kinds of oppression and torture. Enver Hoxha, believing he could eradicate all religious belief by implementing these methods, announced that he had founded the first State in the world that was truly atheist.

COMMUNISM AND THE IRRELIGIOUS SYSTEMS REVEALED IN THE QUR'AN

At the root of the characteristics of the Communist system is its anti-religious ideology. The reason for its brutality and dullness is this same crazed hostility toward religion.

Religion is part of the way of living and thinking that God has given the human beings He created. The best life for Man is one based on religious belief; because the One Who knows the human spirit best is our Lord Who created it. Only a system founded on religion can give peace, while systems rejecting religion will inevitably bring pain, sorrow, fear and insecurity. Above all, these systems opposing all religious truth, trying to force people live in contradiction to it, constitute an even greater danger. Historically, Communism has been one of the most striking examples of just such a system.

Interestingly, Communism shows important similarities to the godless systems that God has described in the Qur'an. Comparing the godless system of Pharaoh given in the Qur'an with some other systems of our age, we see a great similarity.

The Passion for Big Buildings

One common characteristic of all irreligious administrations is their seeking to captivate onlookers with grandeur. Their haughtiness and humiliation of other people are expressed in various ways.

As an example, God tells in the Qur'an about Pharaoh's administration in Egypt in the time of Prophet Moses. In his pride, Pharaoh opposed both God and His apostle Moses, while subjecting his own people to oppression. An example of Pharaoh's arrogance was his command to have a "high tower" built. The Qur'an (28:38) reveals Pharaoh's command to Haman, one of his closest man:

Pharaoh said, "Councilmen, I do not know of any other god for you apart from Me. Haman, kindle a fire for me over the clay and build me a lofty tower, so that perhaps I may be able to climb up

to Moses's god! I consider him [Moses] a blatant liar."

This desire for a "high tower," an expression of Pharaoh's pride, is also reflected in Communist dictatorships' passion for "big buildings." Beginning with the Soviet Union, all Communist states constructed excessively large state buildings as symbols of the regime's strength and endurance. For a long time, the palace built by Romanian dictator Nicolae Ceausescu in Bucharest retained the title of the world's largest building. Yet this palace has a very cold and joyless appearance; size was its most important consideration and it remains an expression of the "superiority complex" of Communist ideology.

Forced Migration

In the Qur'an, God reveals some actions that brought destruction upon their perpetrators, including the removal of people from their homelands. For example, those who denied God threatened the prophets that were sent to them: "**We will drive you from our land unless you return to our religion...**" (Qur'an, 14:13) As is told in verse 22:40, they tried especially to remove Muslims; "**those who were expelled from their homes without any right, merely for saying, 'Our Lord is God'...**"

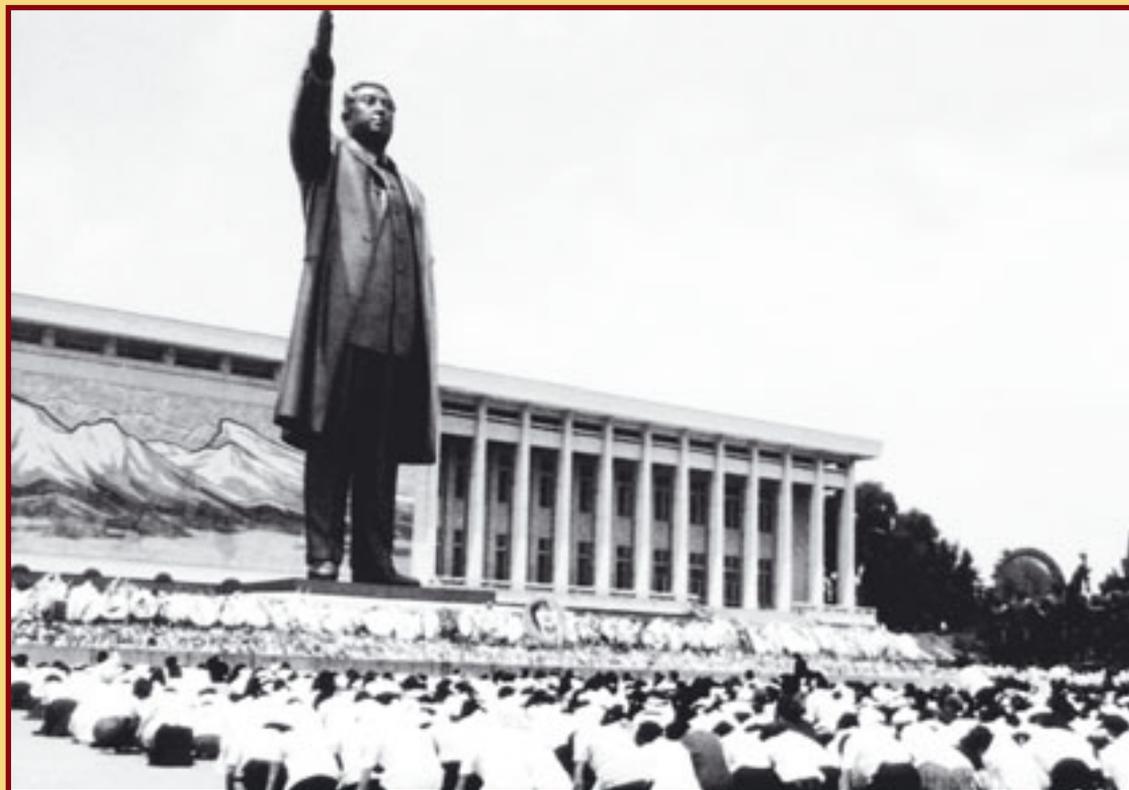
Communist regimes have engineered the greatest forced migrations, and Muslims have been the target of most of them. In Stalin's time, first the Crimean Turks and later, many other Muslim peoples were forced to leave their lands overnight and were dispatched, hungry and miserable to the most barren regions of Russia. Hundreds of thousands of innocents died on the way, and those who survived to reach their destinations died of hunger, infectious diseases, and freezing cold.

The Destruction of Freedom of Belief

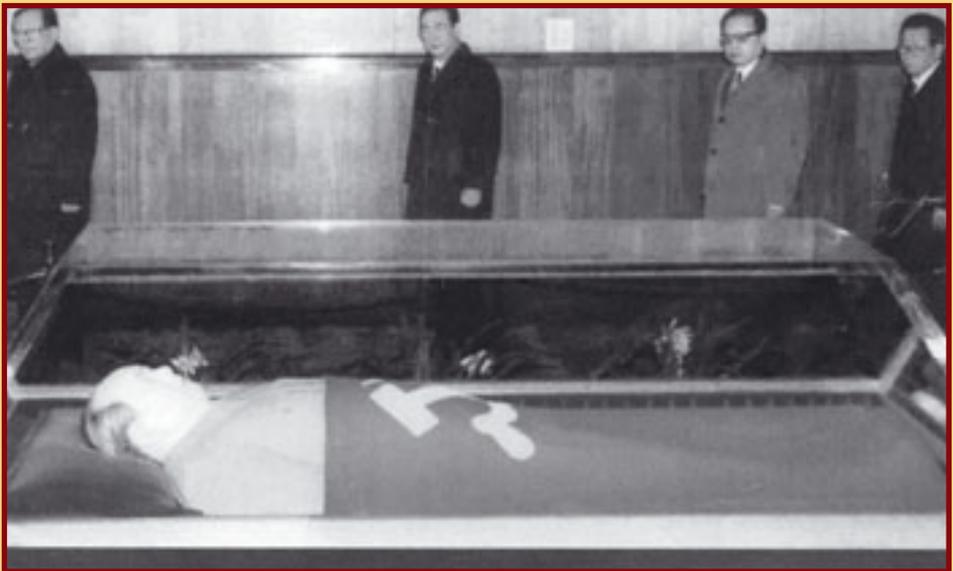
As told in the Qur'an, one characteristic feature of Pharaoh's administration was its outlawing freedom of belief. The system determined what kind of beliefs people could hold. Pharaoh's question to the magicians who believed in Moses shows this clearly; "**Have you believed in Him before I authorized you to do so?**" (Qur'an, 7:123) Again,



Communist propaganda posters idolizing Mao depict him as a "holy person" rising like the sun over all the Chinese people, leading them all on the correct road and bringing happiness and a pleasant life to everyone.



People prostrating themselves in front of a statue of North Korean dictator Kim Il-sung demonstrate that Communism is really a contemporary form of idolatry.



COMMUNISM: A CONTEMPORARY FORM OF IDOLATRY

People looking at the corpses of Lenin and Mao show Communism's tendency to idolize its leaders, in a way similar to that of the idolatrous system of Pharaoh, as revealed in the Qur'an. Lenin and Stalin, who resorted to brutality like Egyptian pharaohs, were mummified just like them. Lenin's brain was taken out seemingly to "examine how superior his intelligence is" and put in protective storage.

while speaking to his people, Pharaoh said that he taught the people the truth they needed to know, and that they shouldn't search for any other truth besides what he taught them: **"I only show you what I see myself and I only guide you to the path of rectitude."** (Qur'an, 40:29)

Pharaoh's modern representatives are the Soviet Union and all the other Communist regimes of the 20th century that attempted to establish totalitarian regimes. In any totalitarianism system, society is totally shaped by the State. People are physically governed by State oppression and mentally by propaganda. The model of Pharaoh's totalitarian system, as described in the Qur'an, was revived in the 20th century by dictators like Lenin, Stalin, and Mao. The Albanian dictator Enver Hoxha, as we mentioned earlier, forbade his countrymen from practicing any religious faith. He closed all places of worship and advertised the government he'd founded as the "world's first atheist State."

The Idolization of Leaders

In the Qur'an (28:38), God tells us that Pharaoh tried to make himself a god in the eyes of the people, as can plainly be seen in Pharaoh's words to those around him: **"Councilmen, I do not know of any other god for you apart from me."** Egyptian history shows us how its pharaohs described themselves as "gods in this world."

Communist regimes wielded the same kind of psychology. Dictators such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao and North Korea's Kim Il-sung initiated programs of mass brainwashing to make themselves seem as gods in the eyes of their peoples. This "cult of personality" was an expression of the policy of "idolizing the leaders."

This tendency towards idolization started first with Lenin, leader of the first Communist revolution in Russia. Indeed, some of the writings Lenin left behind show a noticeable "aura of religion"—but a religion of idols. Lenin organized the Communist Party as a kind of non-religious sect. Upon his death, Party members held a huge ceremony in which they addressed Lenin's corpse with liturgical words such as: "Comrade Lenin, we swear we will carry out your orders." Lenin's body was mummified, like an ancient Egyptian pharaoh's, and placed in an elaborate tomb.

Communism, like the regime of Pharaoh as described in the Qur'an, is an oligarchic system based on minority rule. Communist Party directors look down on the people from above and lead them however they wish. At left, the Soviet oligarchy of the 1920s—the Bolshevik committee saluting on Lenin's mausoleum.



Stalin and Mao followed Lenin's example. Both leaders had giant statues of themselves erected in every city of their countries, trying to produce a portrait of their people's "god-leader." Mao wrote *The Little Red Book*, and every Chinese citizen was responsible for reading this "holy" book and implementing its precepts in his life. Many Chinese still visit the statues of the "Great Helmsman" erected in every part of the country, and on Mao's birthday there are mass suicides.

In North Korea, Kim Il-sung was also idolized after he came to power. He was known as the "Sun of the People," who believed he could lead them along the right path without ever making a mistake. The same thing happened with Ho Chi Minh, North Vietnam's Communist dictator.

Oligarchic Structure

The system of oligarchy is "minority rule," in which political power rests in the hands of a limited group. A look into the Qur'an shows that godless systems have a basically oligarchic structure. When we examine the many verses that speak of "the chiefs of the nations," we see that these people have taken all political power into their own hands, gov-

erning society according to their own ideas. When we look at the verses relating to Pharaoh, we see that his administration was an oligarchic class, composed of advisors, magicians and soldiers. In order to keep the people bound to Pharaoh's administration, the magicians controlled their thinking. The soldiers ensured the same control by brute force.

Communist regimes are the modern counterpart of the godless oligarchic system mentioned in the Qur'an. Communists started out by offering "power of the people," but in every country where **they came to power, they established minority power relying on domination**. All political power in the country passed into the hands of a party that bore the name of the "proletarian party" or Workers' Party, but had no relationship with the workers. The decision-making mechanisms—known as the Communist Party Central Committee and the Politburo, together with the General Secretary over them—retained all the power and used it mercilessly. In Communist regimes, all the supposedly "democratic" mechanisms, such as elections and party congresses, were only a show.

The "Destruction of Crops and Breeding Stock"

When describing the quality of godless administrations in the Qur'an (2:205-206), God draws our attention to something very important:

When he holds the upper hand, he goes about the earth corrupting it, destroying (people's) crops and breeding stock. God does not love corruption. When he is told to heed God, he is seized by pride which drives him to wrongdoing. Hell will be enough for him! What an evil resting-place!

Notice that "going about the earth corrupting it" and "destroying crops and breeding stock" in these verses **precisely describe the slaughters and collectivization** implemented by Communist regimes of the Soviet Union, Red China, and Cambodia. Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Pol Pot forced an atmosphere of fear and terror on their countries. By implementing Lysenko's evolutionist nonsense, they destroyed all the products of agriculture, killed countless numbers, and nearly erased a whole generation. Later, it is revealed in this same verse that the people who

perpetrated this were arrogant and irreligious. This description perfectly fits these dictators, who regarded themselves as gods.

Conclusion

Communists believe that the world is advancing constantly through evolution, and that older societies were less advanced than our modern ones. For this reason, they try to belittle the holy books revealed through ancient prophets thousands of years ago. Fourteen centuries ago, however, God revealed in the Qur'an their ideology and spiritual disposition as ignorance, deceit and psychological depravity. No matter how much Communist leaders may count themselves at the most advanced stage of history, they share much in common with Pharaoh, back in the time of Prophet Moses.

Actually, history shows no "advancement" of human intelligence or psychological make-up. People thousands of years ago had the same characteristics as those who live today. From a cultural and technological point of view, there have been both advancements and regressions. For example the technology in the time of Prophet Solomon, and the technique the Egyptians used to build pyramids are yet unknown. From their surviving pieces of art, some civilizations seem to have accumulated very advanced cultures and technologies, but there is never constant progress.

But as we said at the beginning, God has created human beings of different types of make-up, with certain particular ways of thinking. Among them, history develops according to rules that God has determined. The Qur'an (33:62) says that God's pattern (*Sunnah*), or the natural and social rules that God has imposed, have never changed: **"This is God's pattern with those who passed away before. You will not find any alteration in God's pattern."**

People's commitment to such a brutal, dark and barbarous ideology as Communism caused them to suffer unimagined torments. Those who believed in Darwin's perversion and chose godlessness, prepared their own end. In one verse (Qur'an, 30:41), God describes this:

Corruption has appeared in both land and sea because of what

people's own hands have brought about so that they may taste something of what they have done so that hopefully, they will turn back.

Nobel laureate Aleksandr I. Solzhenitsyn, a passionate critic of Communism, captured in his writings these Divine rules' social nature. In a speech delivered in London in 1983, the Russian author stated why disaster had fallen on his people:

Over a half century ago, while I was still a child, I recall hearing a number of old people offer the following explanation for the great disasters that had befallen Russia: **"Men have forgotten God; that's why all this has happened."**

Since then I have spend well-nigh 50 years working on the history of our revolution; in the process I have read hundreds of books, collected hundreds of personal testimonies, and have already contributed eight volumes of my own toward the effort of clearing away the rubble left by that upheaval. But if I were asked today to formulate as concisely as possible the main cause of the ruinous revolution that swallowed up some 60 million of our people, I could not put it more accurately than to repeat: **"Men have forgotten God; that's why all this has happened."**¹²⁸

Communism happened because people forgot God. It is a living example that shows how merciless, brutal and barbarous a godless society can be, and what kind of society materialist philosophies like Darwinism give birth to. Looking at the misery Communism has brought, we can understand the great difference between a society with religious moral values and one with none. And this is the means whereby we will understand that, for human salvation, the only solution is to live a life founded on religious moral values.

But as long as people keep denying God and wandering into these philosophies distant from the morality of religion, Communism and other perverted ideologies will find a place to exist. As the verse above says, if people do not want "corruption to appear in both land and sea because of what their own hands have brought about," first they must distance themselves from these ideologies and draw others away from them as well. To achieve this, people must be acquainted with the scientific invalidity and the dark side of Darwinism, accepted as scientific

support for the ideologies that have inflicted all this misery on humanity.

In this 21st century, one of the most important duties for people of intelligence, conscience, perception and insight is launching an intellectual struggle against "**the disease of materialism and naturalism,**" as the great Islamic scholar Bediuzzaman called it.



CHAPTER VI

COMMUNISM LURKS IN HIDING

Mention the theory of evolution in the United States, and the first name that usually springs to mind is that of the late Stephen Jay Gould. For years he was professor of Zoology and Paleontology at Harvard University, wrote many books supporting evolution, and made many media appearances to speak about this topic. When there is an argument about evolution, world-famous magazines like Time and Newsweek quote Gould's view. His books appear prominently in bookstores and in the gift shops of natural history museums.

Gould tried to cover up Darwinism's shortcomings and make up for its refutation in the face of the fossil record. Of course, he was not successful. That's why Professor Phillip Johnson of Berkeley, a well-known critic of the theory of evolution, calls Gould the "Gorbachev of Darwinism."¹²⁹ Gould himself even confessed his lack of success on many occasions. (For more detailed information, refer to *Darwinism Refuted: How the Theory of Evolution Breaks Down in the Light of Modern Science*, by Harun Yahya, Goodword Books, 2002)

Stephen Jay Gould was as attached to Marxism as he was to Darwinism, and admitted this openly. For him, Marxism and Darwinism were two sides of one coin. Darwin explains the "dialectics of nature" and Marx explains the "dialectics of history." Gould's attachment of Darwinism was actually the result of his commitment to dialectic-

tical materialism. He rigorously defended Darwin because "Darwin applied a consistent philosophy of materialism to his interpretation of nature."¹³⁰

In 1992, this famous Marxist-Darwinist went on a trip to Russia. A few years before this trip, the Eastern Block had split up; one year earlier, the Soviet Union had collapsed and the Communist Party no longer existed. The whole world was convinced that Communism had fallen. But Gould interpreted the event otherwise. On his return, he stated to reporters that, "**Yes, the Russian reality does discredit a specific Marxist economics,**"—but went on to say that Marx has been proven right about "**the validity of the larger model of punctuational change.**"¹³¹

According to Gould, Marxism is still alive.

Communism is Alive as Well

Stephen Jay Gould's commitment to Darwinism is not an exceptional case. Among the well-known 20th century scientists who accept the theory of evolution, many have been Marxists. In the first half of the last century, individuals like Alexander Oparin and J.B.S. Haldane were all passionate Marxists who carried out their most important experiments in the name of evolution. Western evolutionist scientists like John Maynard Smith and Richard Lewontin are still avid defenders of Marxism.

According to these men, Darwinism and Marxism have the same meaning. Each theory is based on a common philosophical foundation: Dialectical materialism, which Marx applied to history, and Darwin applied to nature. According to these people, the universally held idea that Communism collapsed along with the fall of the Soviet Union and the Eastern Bloc is wrong, only "a false interpretation of Marxism" has



Stephen Jay Gould, an ardent Marxist, was one of the most prominent Darwinist scientists in the U.S. When the USSR collapsed, he proclaimed that Marxism had only grown stronger.

fallen. As long as dialectical materialism lasts, a Marxist understanding of politics will endure.

This idea is accepted by many individuals and organizations that still believe in Marxism. While the Soviet Union and the Eastern Bloc still existed, these contemporary Communists separated Communist regimes from Marxist ideology. They called existing Communist regimes "real" or "living" Socialism, contending that socialist ideology is not integral to these regimes; even if they collapsed, it would remain.

Their claim—still considered valid today—is that according to Marx, a society must undergo particular evolutions, advancing first from capitalism, then to socialism and finally to Communism. Russia and other 20th century Communist regimes, however, experienced a sudden passage from an agricultural society to socialism, omitting the intervening capitalist stage. Therefore, according to Marxists, it's only natural that these regimes did not succeed. Today, these countries have adopted capitalism, to develop through the "stage of capitalism" that Marx spoke of. When socialism finally comes, it will be stronger and more enduring.

Many who still believe in Marxism have adopted this interpretation. Their number includes leading scientists like Stephen Jay Gould to European Communist parties, from Marxist intellectuals and journalists to separatist Communist terror organizations. Therefore, it's very wrong to think that Communism has passed into history with the collapse of the USSR and the Eastern Bloc, and poses no more threat to the world.

Communism is a political expression of dialectical materialism, so that if that theory survives, so will Communism. If a particular philosophy is strong in a society, it is only a matter of its finding an appropriate environment to make itself politically influential. If the philosophy of dialectical materialism becomes strong and widespread, then



As long as Darwinism survives, so will dialectical materialism and Communism. Marxist-Darwinist scientists in the U.S. are proof of this assertion. At left, Peter Singer's A Darwinian Left.

Communism—its political aspect—may become an influential force.

In today's world, there is generally a strong trust in democracy and a liberal economy. But any international crisis in the liberal economic order could change people's tendencies and psychology. This has happened before. Following the Crash of 1929, a serious economic crisis throughout the whole world quickly increased the popularity of Communism and Fascism in Europe. Communists interpreted the Great Depression as the "collapse" of the capitalist system and used it as an opportunity to influence the masses more easily.

At present, Communists have considerable power, especially in Europe. Communist parties in France and Italy remain strong and in elections, they obtain a high proportion of votes. Almost all the former Eastern Bloc countries have socialist parties led by former Communist party members, who also obtain a substantial number of votes. A new international crisis could push these countries to strengthen their socialist parties and from there, into Communist regimes.

Russia: One Forward, Two Back!

A very narrow line separates Communism and Fascism, which are like two opposite sides of the political fan. Each ideology has a similar social and moral structure and the same model of leadership. Social science includes each in the same class of "totalitarian ideologies." Totalitarianism is a model in which the state controls society with propaganda, oppression and fear, and where opponents are removed by the most merciless methods.

After 1991, Russia's political regime and political culture did not change very much. They just passed from Communism to a kind of Fascism based on the domination of the mafia. Basic changes occurred only in the economy and social structure. Many people became rich very quickly, but most people's living standard fell. A growing chasm formed between the rich and the poor, and Russia acquired a "brutal capitalist" structure similar to that of 19th-century England. With weak state authority and the appearance of organized crime, a kind of "feudal" structure came into being.

Interestingly, these two newly formed structures—"brutal capitalism" and "feudalism"—fulfill the conditions required for the Revolution according to Marxism. **From a Marxist perspective, Russia's present structure is "pre-Communist."** The Communists who have the majority of the votes and influence state mechanisms, think that in the event of an international crisis that shakes confidence in democracy and a liberal economy, Communists could turn this theory to practice. Russia could once again easily pass into the hands of a Communist regime.

Here, we notice one of Communism's sly tactics: creating an order that arises out of the breakdown of their own chronology of history (the passage from capitalism to Communism). For this reason, they surrendered the Russian people into the hands of the mafia and prepared the environment for the coming of classical capitalism. They crush the people with the very system they've established, trying to make them believe that there is no other solution but Communism.

On the other hand, Communism continues to exist in secret. Russia's present authorities are all former Communists, educated according to Marx's dialectical materialism and have not given up their dreams of a Communist state. On the contrary, they believe that Communism must develop from the capitalist phase and look on while capitalism is exercised because they regard this as a requirement of being a "Communist." They currently support and implement capitalism at this particular time because they are truly Communists.

Russian demonstrators shouting out slogans opposing Russia's new capitalist order and demanding a return to Communism.



THE STEALTHY TACTIC OF DIALECTICAL MATERIALISM: ONE STEP FORWARD, TWO STEPS BACK

Those who think that Communism collapsed a few years ago and is no longer a danger today are very mistaken. In accordance with its doctrine of Dialectical Materialism, Communism has only taken a tactical retreat. According to Lenin's book, *One Step Forward; Two Steps Back*, sometimes Communists must take a few steps backwards and appear to be retreating from their goals in order to achieve them. Chinese school children are taught the "dialectical way of walking"—two steps back, three steps forward.

One concrete example of this is Communist thinking about the family. According to Karl Marx, founder of Dialectical Materialism, the institution of the family must be abolished in order to achieve Communism. In the Communist Manifesto, Marx and Engels wrote, "Abolition of the family! Even the most radical flare up at this infamous proposal of the communists."¹ and then proceeded to explain their own reasons why the family must be abolished. They proposed that the "bourgeois family" is dependent on capital and private gain, and that when these were removed (that is, after the Communist revolution), the family would disappear too. The family, they claimed, would vanish as a matter of course when its complement vanishes.

In his book *Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State*, Friedrich Engels tried to show that in the first period of human history, the family did not exist but appeared only later, as an artificial institution for purposes of exploitation. According to this philosophy of Engels, when the Communist revolution came, the family, along with the state and private property, would disappear.

To achieve these goals, Communists follow the doctrine of Dialectical Materialism. In order to abolish the family, they need a powerful state. But for a state to be strong, first the family institution must be strong. By first taking one step backward, they strengthen the family and the Communist state grows strong. Then one stage later, it abolishes the family.² Communists are deceiving the people by proclaiming that Communism has collapsed and that family ties have become stronger in Russia. This tactic of Dialectical Materialism is stressed by Lenin in *One Step Forward, Two Steps Back*. Communism has changed its color like a chameleon and is waiting, while it prepares a suitable foundation.

For this reason, there must be a serious struggle in the realm of ideas with Dialectical Materialism, Communism's founding philosophy, and with Darwinism—its supposed "scientific" basis. Otherwise, Communism, now waiting in ambush, will take its brutal and bloody steps forward.

1- Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, Manifesto of the Communist Party, Moscow: Foreign Languages Publishing House, 1957, pp. 79-80.

2- Dr. Fred C. Schwartz, You Can Trust the Communists to be Communists, Prentice Hall, 1960.

Those who have adopted the principles of dialectical materialism find it easy to appear to be Communists one day and Fascists the next, in order to eventually achieve their goal. Because the goals of Fascism and Communism are the same—to oppress people—the line between these two ideologies is very indistinct. The only difference is that Communism continues its oppression secretly, under "humanistic" slogans while trying to validate its characteristic oppression and brutality.

Behind these various curtains of secrecy, Communism is still in power in the Russian State, which has a classical Communist structure. The USSR's military control over the Turkic republics still stands. Even in their capitalist system, passionate Communist members continue to oppress the people. Their anti-religious and amoral suggestions alienate society from its moral values and encourage it to dismiss the existence of God. After this, no reason remains for them not to accept Communism.

Russian Communists, who still march carrying posters of Stalin and Lenin, have power that cannot be despised or underestimated. In his 1904 book, *One Step Forward, Two Steps Back*, Lenin stated that on the road to any eventual goal, there must be a temporary step backward. This is how the Communists regard the collapse of the USSR in 1991. In this book, Lenin wrote:

One step forward, two steps back. . . . It happens in the lives of individuals, and it happens in the history of nations and in the development of parties. It would be the most criminal cowardice to doubt even for a moment the inevitable and complete triumph of the principles of revolutionary Social-Democracy, of proletarian organisation and Party discipline. ¹³²

Mao Lives!

In Eastern Europe and Russia, Communist systems that collapsed in the 1990's are likely to come back to life. But another kind of Communism never has collapsed and, under the appearance of capitalism, continues to gain strength every day. This version of Communism is the worst and most barbarous kind: Maoism.

After Soviet Russia collapsed in 1991, statues of Lenin and Stalin were toppled from their places. Russia abandoned Communism—sup-

posedly. But in China, such has never happened. From Mao's death in 1976 to the present, the Communist Party still governs. China adopted the rules of a capitalist economy and has made great economic advances as a result, but its political system is still Communist. And strangely, Mao, the murderer of tens of millions of Chinese, is still regarded by the Chinese as a holy figure.

On January 10, 1994, *Time* magazine published an article, "Mao Lives!" reporting a mass pro-Mao movement in China that it termed "Mao-mania":

Mao to ordinary Chinese is still a sphinx, an idol with a hundred faces whose words, like Scripture, are quoted to almost any purpose. . . . A wave of retrochic has washed over the country as collectors grab up recordings of Mao's preachments, as well as badges, books, cigarette lighters and even yo-yos bearing his image. Not all the souvenirs are gimcrackery: some 5,000 gold-and-diamond watches commemorating his Dec.26 birthday have been selling at the lucky-eight but eye-popping figure of 8,888 yuan: \$ 1,530, or 30 times the average monthly wage. . . . In the south-central province of Hunan, the Great Helmsman's birthplace of Shaoshan draws swelling numbers of pilgrims: more than 1 million in 1992 alone. The town recently unveiled a 10-m-high bronze statue of its favorite son.¹³³

In 1997, the American magazine *New Republic* published an important article entitled "Mao More Than Ever," describing the "idolization" of Mao in China:

Mao Zedong remains the central, dominant figure in Chinese political culture: he is still an imperial presence; he is still revered; he is, even, still cool. The evidence is everywhere in China. In a 1994 poll, 40 percent of Chinese respondents picked Mao as their favorite leader, compared to less than 10 percent for Deng Xiaoping. **"Today Chinese youths don't know or take seriously Mao's mistakes,"** Yan Jiaqi, a former member of the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, told *Asiaweek*. "They think he was a great leader. They only know Deng's mistakes." In the countryside, new and massive temples have been built to Mao in the Fujian and Guangdong provinces, and another temple is under construction in the northern Shaanxi province of Gushuicun. The temples are frequented by **party officials and peasants who believe Mao can do everything from cure illnesses**

"Mao lives!"
With these
words, the
January 10, 1994
edition of *Time*
magazine char-
acterized the po-
litical culture in
China.



to guarantee a good crop. In 1993, several workers at a Sichuan factory committed suicide on the one-hundredth anniversary of Mao's birth--they were convinced they would join him in an afterlife. Taxicab drivers in Beijing and Shanghai dangle Mao's portrait from their rearview mirrors. Artists are incorporating Mao's image into their works, and a gigantic portrait of Mao still looms over Tiananmen Square. And, most importantly, in the party and **in the universities, the fashionable political philosophy isn't democracy; it's the new Maoism.**

Mao hasn't made a comeback. He never left. Unlike Germany or Russia, China has never made an attempt to confront its past; it never tried to engage in de-Maoification. The Communist Party has resisted any attempts to confront either the horrors of the late 1950s Great Leap Forward, when a Mao-made famine took tens of millions of Chinese lives, or those of the Cultural Revolution, in which state-sanctioned barbarity reached the nadir of encouraging cannibalism among school children. Efforts to speak the truth about these matters are squelched: when, for example, the Shanghai University journal *Society* stated in 1993 that 40 million had perished in Mao's famine, that issue of the magazine was instantly recalled.

What informs China's politics is what has informed it for the last fifty years: a **philosophy that mixes nationalism and communism and that is built upon the legend of Mao as founding father.** ¹³⁴

So, what does this post-Mao capitalism mean? Is it a departure

from Maoism in China, or the strengthening of the economic aspect of Maoism? The same article states:

Even after the denouement of the Cultural Revolution—the humiliation of Mao's wife and the other members of the Gang of Four—the cult of Mao lived. Although veneration had, for the time being, receded among the Chinese people, the party continued to occupy itself intellectually with Maoism. Two main groups emerged, Maoist fundamentalists (*fanshipai*) and nostalgists (*huanyuanpai*) who yearned for the golden age of the 1950s. The party Maoists kept the faith alive, but, with the barbarity of the Cultural Revolution still fresh in familial memories, they could not much fan it openly. For the nationalist-communist philosophy of Maoism to blossom fully again, there needed to appear a threat to China, an event that would awaken among the people the resting fear that China might lose its greatness, might fall prey to the depredations of the West. This event occurred on June 4, 1989, when Chinese troops mowed down student protesters at Tiananmen Square. In the wake of Tiananmen, the idea of China descending into chaos and collapse prompted the party to revive the idea of class struggle. . . . China, Jiang [Zemin] said, would continue to pursue economic reforms, but no one should be deluded that democratization would take place. Under Jiang's supervision, **the party has promoted "thought reform" in the countryside and carried out Maoist-style education campaigns.**

Much of the firepower for these attempts to restore Maoism has come from a group of young intellectuals clustered around party elder Deng Liqun. These Marxist fundamentalists control the *People's Daily*, the ministry of propaganda and numerous journals such as *Seeking Truth*. . . . In 1995 and 1996, they issued two "ten-thousand-word documents" calling for a return to class struggle and Maoism." ¹³⁵

Obviously, Maoism still dominates China. It's not simply an inheritance of aged Communist Party administrators from Mao's time, but a living inheritance for a younger generation still blindly bound to Marxism. Peasants and the uneducated masses view Mao as a supreme being; most intellectuals consciously espouse and disseminate Marxist-Leninist-Maoist ideology. Chinese capitalism is simply hiding and strengthening Maoism.

China is the world's most populous country, and its economy continues to grow. Its arms production is such that, in the 21st century, it is thought that China will rival the United States as a superpower. That an ever-stronger China is still Maoist, with "Mao-mania" thriving among its 1.2 billion population, shows once again that Communism is not dead but is only hidden. Worse still, this is Maoist Communism, the most barbarous and brutal version.

The Universal Maoist Movement

Mao is alive not only in China, but internationally. After the Soviet Union's collapse, international Communism's center of gravity shifted to Maoism. Communist establishments in place in both North Korea and Vietnam, still rule according to Maoist ideology. Most noticeably, terror organizations in various parts of the world have adopted Maoism and commit acts of bloodshed in Mao-style guerilla wars. Maoist organizations from different countries have joined together in what is called the "Maoist Internationalist Movement," while European Communist parties have gained great support.

On the official Internet site of the Northern Cyprus Turkish Republic, the following analysis appears about the International Maoist Movement:

According to statistics from the International Terror Research Center, **in recent years there has been a notable increase in the number of Marxist-Leninist-Maoist terrorist organizations.** Sources monitoring international terrorism report that Maoism is engaged in intense activity, in both words and actions. Foremost in their universal objectives and ruthless anti-Western, anti-democratic mindsets are the Maoist "Tamil Tigers" in Sri Lanka, the "Shining Path" in Peru, the Khmer Rouge in Cambodia and others whose names are only beginning to be heard.

The Maoists' aim is to spread Mao Tse-tung's teachings by means of bloodshed and replace democratic regimes with a Marxist-Leninist-Maoist state, by means of armed struggle. Their underlying objective, of course, is to spread Maoism throughout the entire world.

Maoist terrorist organizations from East and West met twice, in America

and India, during 1996, and vowed to pursue a policy of joint action. Following the meeting in America, they decided:

To overthrow parliamentary democracy in countries where they are active.

In order to achieve their aims, **to kill** not only soldiers, police officers, and members of the state apparatus, but anyone who is not one of them—making no exceptions of **children, women, or the elderly**.

To construct a centralist, single-party administration in which human rights are disregarded.

To build a world revolution based on Marxist-Leninist-Maoist ideology.

Another important decision taken at these meetings was to build a **"Maoist propaganda center" in order to lay the foundations of the "world revolution."** This center, known as the Maoist International Movement (MIM), is believed to be active in Canada. Within the framework drawn up by "Internationalist Maoists," publications designed to provoke and incite the people in target countries are prepared, then sent to their supporters in those countries for distribution... ¹³⁶

This discovery, based on solid evidence, shows once again that Maoism is engaged in an international effort. The international Communist net stretches back to Red China's bloody dictatorship and continues as a serious threat to the world.

Religion is Communism's main block, and only a society that lives closely bound to its religion can defend itself against Communism's provocations and deceptions. Those with this strong character will lead the world in the 21st century's intellectual, scholarly and scientific struggle against materialism.

Certain Techniques Communists Use to Come out of Ambush

– Manipulating and provoking the different segments of society by blending in among them:

Seeking to destroy the established order and imposing their own rule in its place, communists first try to blend in among the segments of society and masquerade as one of them in order to attract supporters. This is followed by incitement and manipulation tactics that are geared

towards making people instruments of communist ideals by earning their trust through lies and distortions.

When explaining the objectives of his party, Lenin stated that the communist militants should strengthen their ties with the people by blending in among them, thus ensuring their expansion through inciting and organizing them:

All the usual, regular, and current work of all organizations and groups of our Party, the work of propaganda, **agitation, and organization, is directed towards strengthening and expanding the ties with the masses.** ¹³⁷

It is exceptionally important at the present time for Social-Democrats to have correct **tactical slogans** for leading the masses. There is **nothing more dangerous in a revolutionary period than belittling the importance of tactical slogans that are sound in principle.** ¹³⁸

Accordingly, the Congress instructs all Party organizations: a- to explain to the proletariat **by means of propaganda and agitation**, not only the political significance, but the practical organizational aspect of the impending armed uprising. ¹³⁹

Lenin ranks indoctrination, propaganda, and organization activities among the sine qua nons of communist uprising that are to be aimed at the people in order to gain supporters:

General conditions for “preparing an uprising” such as: a) extending agitation; b) strengthening the ties with the mass movement; c) promoting a revolutionary consciousness; d) establishing connections between the various localities; e) winning over non-proletarian groups to support the proletariat. ¹⁴⁰

The method the PKK has employed for decades to bring our Kurdish citizens living in the Southeast into their ranks and increase the number of militants, followers, and supporters of the organization is none other than this Leninist method. However, our pious, prudent, virtuous, and courageous Kurdish brothers have made no concessions to these ill-advised methods, thus they have heroically stood up for years against the bloody and ruthless oppression and threats of the organization.

Except for a handful of ignorant people, the PKK could not recruit anyone among our noble Kurdish brothers through these communist tactics. Therefore, the organization resorted to methods such as kidnap-

order must be brought down, and a regime change is needed is induced. On the other hand, communist provocateurs blend in among the activists and the ordinary people for provocation, agitation, and organizing purposes. By doing so, the activists, who have set out to stage a sincere democratic demonstration or criticize and protest the government policies, are attempted to be made a part of a revolutionist communist uprising.

Lenin explains this basic method of communists as follows:

... to refuse to treat insurrection as an art is a betrayal of Marxism and a betrayal of the revolution.¹⁴¹

In fact, the Taksim Gezi Park protests known as the "Gezi Incidents" that were staged in Istanbul, Turkey in May 2013 are a striking example of this method employed by the communists. The demonstration in Taksim, Gezi Park was initially an innocent and environmentalist protest which was justified, based on realistic and reasonable demands, and it seemed like it was going to achieve its purpose. The young protesters were protesting to save nature and they were doing so in a legitimate way. Furthermore, taking a positive step, the Government put aside the project of building a historical barracks in place of the Park. However, in the following days, through the manipulation of separatist and terrorist groups, this legitimate protest got out of control. Through the provocations of terrorist groups, these protests turned into armed and bloody revolts, even an anti-democratic movement that spread to other cities as well.

Partaking in this demonstration with their provocateurs and militants, the communist separatist organizations initiated a large-scale anti-government revolt that began in Taksim and its vicinity, later spreading across Turkey. A park, where children would play and the youngsters would meet up, was destroyed after terrorist organizations such as DHKP-C, PKK, and MLKP had become involved in the demonstration. The riots, which quickly grew and spread like wildfire through the incitement of communist organizations, illegal associations and institutions, and the support and propaganda activities by certain media organs, could only be suppressed through the days-long operations of the security forces. The communist terrorist groups who sought to storm the house of the then Prime Minister in an attempt to detain him could





THE GEZI INCIDENTS

The Taksim Gezi Park protests are a striking example of the method employed by the Communists. The demonstration was initially an innocent and environmentalist protest. Partaking in this demonstration with their provocateurs and militants, the communist separatist organizations initiated a large-scale anti-government revolt that began in Taksim and its vicinity, later spreading across Turkey.



Zaman, 03.06.2013

only be neutralized at the last moment a few hundred meters away from the house.

What is more terrifying is that driven by communist propaganda, actions, methods, tactics and techniques, this illegal, terror-backed, anti-democratic coup attempt aimed at toppling the elected government was presented to the international public by certain circles under a legitimate pretense such as "freedom of expression", "defending democratic rights" and "legal government protests". Certain British, French, German and the US-based international media organizations intentionally and purposively conveyed the events to the whole world in this untruthful format. Personally coming to Taksim and joining the activists together with international secret service agents, representatives of certain European environmentalist, social democratic, and communist parties and institu-



MEYDANDA YABANCI VAR

Gezi Parkı için başlatılan gösterilerin yabancı parmağı ile provokasyona dönüştüğü istihbarat raporlarına yazıldı. Göstericilerin içine sızarak kalabalıkları şiddete yönlendirenleri tek tek tespit eden emniyet birimleri, olayların Türkiye geneline sıçramasında bin kadar provokatörün görev aldığına belirledi. Listede yabancı ajanlar da var.



Yeni Şafak, 04.06.2013

ÖLDÜRÜLDÜLER AN

► Ankara'da önceki gün yaşanan olayların ardından, emniyet birimleri tarafından tespit edilen provokatörlerin listesini yayınladı. Listede yabancı ajanlar da var.

CHP VE İP İÇİNE SIZDILAR

► Parti, bazı illerdeki gösterilerin emniyet tarafından tespit edilen provokatörlerin listesini yayınladı. Listede yabancı ajanlar da var.

FOREIGNERS IN THE SQUARE



tions played an active part in the propaganda and provocation activities.

And the security forces, which put up an arduous struggle against this communist uprising, were heavily criticized and ultimately introduced as anti-people and anti-democratic by certain domestic and foreign media groups, certain political and academic circles, and even certain think-tanks and NGOs; they were sought to be pacified through psychological pressure methods.

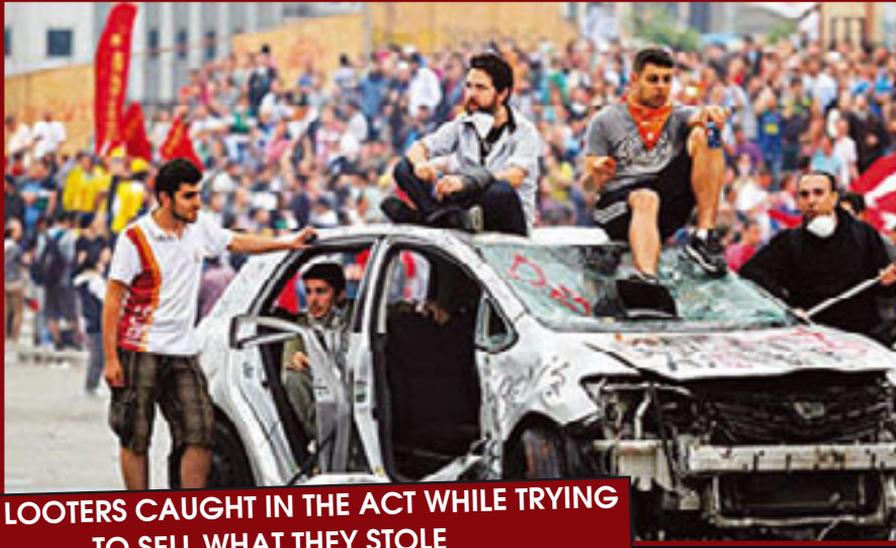
The subsequent vandalism, looting and arson carried out using stones, wood sticks, Molotov cocktails, and firearms left in their wake a lot of deaths and injuries, and resulted in a great financial loss country-wide. Many private and government properties were damaged, destroyed, or burned down. Tens of automobiles, municipality buses, ambulances, construction vehicles, and official cars were sabotaged. Banks, shops, and stores were looted.

In addition to this, factors such as interest rates soaring from 4.67 to 9 percent, a total of a 33 billion dollar loss in the trading securities of companies, foreign investors withdrawing their capital from the country, increasing exchange rates, and rising inflation were predicated to cost Turkey tens of billions of dollars.

The Financial Loss Caused by the Gezi Incidents

- Many private and government properties were damaged, destroyed, or burned down.
- Tens of automobiles, municipality buses, ambulances, and construction vehicles were





'GEZI' LOOTERS CAUGHT IN THE ACT WHILE TRYING TO SELL WHAT THEY STOLE



- Banks, shops, and stores were looted.
- Interest rates soared from 4.67 to 9 percent.
- A total of a 33 billion dollar was lost in the trading securities of companies.
- Exchange rates increased.
- Foreign investors withdrew their capital from the country.
- Inflation rose.



It is a grave danger to seek rights through non-democratic methods

In democratic societies, legal demonstrations and protests are among fundamental civilian rights. The freedom of criticism and expression is an essential value that strengthens and enriches the culture of democracy. Any issue that calls for change is, again, handled through democratic methods and the choices of people are respected. All the methods that go beyond democracy and cause instigation and terror among people pose a serious threat for everyone.

The armed revolutionary uprisings that aim to harm, repress and ultimately overthrow the legally-elected government are among the most classic communist tactics that were personally formulated by Lenin himself.

Favourable conditions for an **insurrection** are created by **the disorganization of the government, by our agitation, and by our organization.** ¹⁴²

We must propagate among the broadest sections of the proletariat the idea that **the armed proletariat**, led by the Social-Democratic [revolutionary] Party, **must bring to bear constant pressure on the provisional government** for the purpose of defending, consolidating, and extending the gains of the revolution... **to organize armed resistance to the actions..., in general, of all reactionary elements led by the government.** ¹⁴³

We must in any **case exercise pressure on the provisional revolutionary government from below. To be able to exercise this pressure from below, the proletariat must be armed**—for in a revolutionary situation matters develop with exceptional rapidity to the stage of **open civil war**—and must be led by the Social-Democratic Party. ¹⁴⁴

The communist literature clearly defines how the current government will be overthrown through armed revolution among "democracy, freedom of thought, human rights" chants, and what form the next government will take. In fact, Lenin declared in advance that the post-revolution regime would be none other than a communist dictatorship based on the armed militia force.

... whoever expects that socialism will be achieved *without* a social revolution and **the dictatorship of the proletariat** is not a socialist. **Dictatorship is state power based directly on violence.** And in the twentieth century — as

in the age of civilisation generally — violence means neither a fist nor a club, but *troops*. To put “disarmament” in the programme is tantamount to making the general declaration: We are opposed to the use of arms. There is as little Marxism in this as there would be if we were to say: We are opposed to violence! ¹⁴⁵

And such a **victory will be precisely a dictatorship, i.e., it must inevitably rely on military force, on the arming of the masses, on an insurrection, and not on institutions of one kind or another established in a “lawful” or “peaceful” way.**

Without a dictatorship it is impossible to break down that resistance and repel counter-revolutionary attempts. ¹⁴⁶

– By founding autonomous governments in suitable regions, communists seek to lay the foundations of separation and a sovereign communist state:

Designating suitable areas as pilot regions, where they believe they can achieve success in geographical, sociological, and demographical terms, communists initially enter a process of organizing and structuring in these regions, endeavoring to assert dominance. As seen in many examples throughout the world; by forming their own militant elements in areas where the armed government forces may prove weak and ineffective, they achieve dominance over the public that is based on armed oppression and threats.

By means of these armed, oppressive, and terrorist practices, the terrorist organizations manage to exert major influence and control over people. In time, they assume control over certain political institutions in the region they set their eyes on such as municipalities, local governments, etc. Their next step is the thorough utilization of these institutions as an instrument for their self-interests, plans, strategies, and activities.

Of course, this is another classic method of communism. In fact, Lenin emphasizes how significant it is in a communist revolution to utilize the seized municipalities against the current government as follows:

Wherever possible **seize municipal institutions** and make them the bulwark of the people’s revolutionary government! ¹⁴⁷

After these stages are completed, and having established political dominance over the region, the communist movement, in the second step, wages a seemingly political, yet in truth an armed struggle in order for the region to achieve autonomy. The terms that are frequently used in such processes such as "self-governance", "federative autonomy", "confederation", etc., are nothing but fancy political jargon used for the project of dividing the unitary state.

For communism, autonomy is one of the most important milestones on the road to sovereign communist dictatorship: Once autonomy is achieved in a region, it becomes quite easy to completely separate this region from the homeland. It becomes only a matter of time before declaring independence through the authority to "call for referendum", which the administrators such as the Governor or the Mayor of the "recently autonomous" region will have acquired. It will not be hard for the communist militants who possess all sorts of suppressive and deterring powers over the people to force them to reach a secession decision, or even achieve an almost 100% success rate in a possible referendum on this subject.

The multi-staged method of the communist movement to seize power is explained by Lenin as follows:

Both resolutions state that **the present revolution is only our first step**, which will be followed by a second; but from this, one resolution draws the conclusion that we must take this first step all the sooner, get it over all the sooner, **win a republic, mercilessly crush the counter-revolution, and prepare the ground for the second step.** ¹⁴⁸

As a matter of fact, all these tactics and developments we have summarized briefly have happened in our country not long ago. Striving for years to assert de facto regional dominance in the Southeast of Turkey and having exercised ruthless control over the local community through its armed structure, the terrorist organization PKK has established overwhelming dominance over certain municipalities in the region by means of its political extensions. In this way, the terrorist organization exploits certain municipalities for meeting all their logistical needs, from housing its militants to the transportation of items such as weapons or bombs, from digging ditches and setting up barricades to planting tons of remote-controlled mines on highways.

The facilities, institutions, and all kinds of technical means of said municipalities are allocated to the organization to cater to their needs. The members of the organization receive their Marxist-Leninist-Darwinist education again within these municipalities. In addition to this, the fees, taxes, etc., gathered from the people by certain municipalities, and all the material, economical, and financial support provided by the government to them are directly transferred to the coffers of the PKK.

In short, expending all of its financial means and political extensions, the PKK exhausts all its power and concentration for establishing an autonomous federation in the region under its control. Needless to say, their aim is to declare an independent communist Kurdistan state in the second stage with a simple maneuver. The "autonomy" dream is the reason for the PKK's existence and it is an important milestone for the communist cause this terrorist organization has been fighting for, for almost 40 years. Therefore, it is quite clear that, at this stage, the PKK will not shy away from any bloodthirsty deeds and actions.

However, no matter how close the atheist-communist terrorist organization PKK thinks it is to its ultimate goal, no matter how certain they are of achieving it, there is an important matter that they do not take into account: The trap God has set against the unbelievers...

God informs us in the Qur'an that the unbelievers will never prevail over the believers and ultimately, they will inevitably fall into the trap devised by God and end up defeated. In the Qur'an, Almighty God says:

Do they feel secure against God's devising? No one feels secure against God's devising except for those who are lost. (Qur'an, 7:99)

... They were plotting and God was plotting, but God is the Best of Plotters. (Qur'an, 8:30)

For this reason, by the grace of God, those who will ultimately prevail will not be the PKK, but our Muslim state and faithful nation. Our Muslim Kurdish brothers will be freed from the plague that is the PKK and the oppression they have suffered for years:

God has written: "I will be victorious, I and My messengers." God is Most Strong, Almighty. (Qur'an, 58:21)

CHAPTER VII



THE COMMUNIST ORGANIZATION THAT SPRINGS OUT OF AMBUSH: THE PKK



Abdullah Ocalan: To those who say “Socialism collapsed, communism collapsed”, our best answer to give is ‘on the contrary, communism is practiced in its strongest, most proper, most noble form by the PKK’.¹⁴⁹

Today, the PKK terrorist organization, with its branches such as the PYD, YPG, YPS, HPG, SDG, PJAK, etc., is a Marxist, Leninist, and Stalinist structure whose goal is to found a sovereign communist Kurdistan state in Southeast Turkey, the north of Syria and Iraq, and Southwestern Iran. The main objective of the organization is to establish the communist system and ideology initially in the area, next throughout Turkey, and finally in the whole region by exploiting Kurdish nationalism and ethnicity.

(For detailed information on the subject, you can refer to the books by Harun Yahya (Adnan Oktar) *The Danger of a Communist Kurdistan* and *America’s Failure to Perceive the PKK*)

The PKK movement, in every aspect, is the biggest armed communist uprising in the world today. However, to be able to gain the support and sympathy of the international community and to avoid drawing direct rebuff, at this stage, it continues this communist uprising under the guise of a democratic freedom movement. It seems determined to main-

tain this two-faced attitude until it achieves its ultimate goal.

For almost 40 years, the PKK has carried out thousands of bloody terrorist activities, nefariously and atrociously killing tens of thousands of innocent civilians. In every period, the organization drew financial and spiritual support of the communist, socialist, and social democratic governments, organizations, parties, and institutions, and the Darwinist-atheist deep state structures for their activities and uprisings. They still continue to enjoy this support to the highest degree.

Through extensive perception operations in favor of the PKK, the press and media organs, politicians, journalists and writers, academic circles, strategy groups and think-tanks that are under the thumb of these powers provide the necessary image and propaganda support to the communist organization in every period.

The fact that a Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist terrorist group like the PKK can uphold a large-scale uprising in this day and age by pursuing the fundamental principles of the communist ideology and employing its activity and propaganda methods is the most concrete and topical proof that in no era has communism really been eliminated. Lying in ambush in every period, communism seeks to reach its ultimate goal by quickly springing into action when a favorable circumstance, opportunity or condition emerges. The PKK is its latest example.

To be able to turn the Muslim Kurdish people in the region into instruments of this communist uprising, many circles who support the PKK today try to present the organization as the representative of the Kurdish people, and the militants as liberty warriors who fight for the freedom and the lands of its people.

Particularly, various think-tanks, media organs and political analysts who are affiliated with the British deep state are leading and organizing this distortion and disinformation. Certain British media organs such as BBC, The Guardian, Financial Times, Independent, The Economist and think-tanks that directly provide consultancy services to the British deep state such as Chatham House are the leading entities in this. These circles put forward writings and articles, opinions, and state-

BBC's image building for the PKK

BBC'DEN PKK'YA İMAJ ÇALIŞMASI!

Sabah, 20.08.2015

PKK'lı canileri "masum" gösterme alçaklığı!

The shameful act of portraying PKK
murderers as "innocent"!



BBC, Türkiye'yi kan gölüne çeviren PKK'nı teröristleri dünyaya özgürlük savaşçısı gibi gösterdi. Kültür İnanç'ta sona eren İRA ziyaretleri kapsamında gerçekleştirilen İngiliz yaygın kuruluşu BBC, Kandi'de yaptığı röportajda bebek katili teröristlere mahiyetler diyor. Kadın teröristlerde makyaj yaparken konuşan BBC, onlara "halkı, masum, özgürlük savaşçısı" imajı vermeye çalıştı. BBC, sabahe baş

Yeniçağ, 22.08.2015



BBC, 20.08.2015

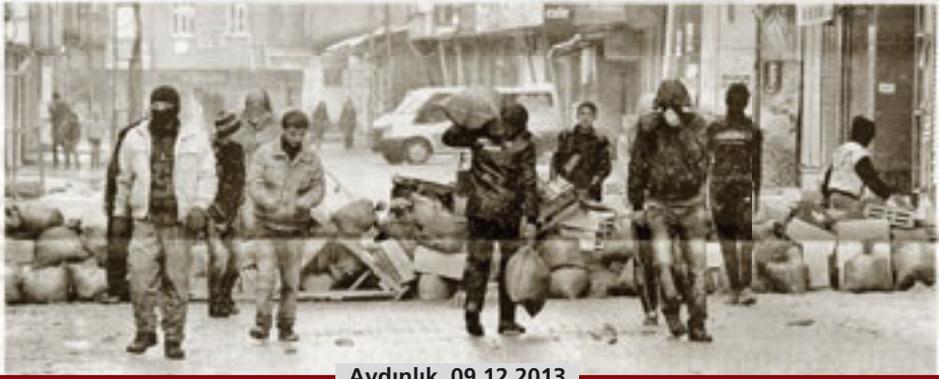
ments that praise the PKK and deceive the world public opinion by presenting the organization as victims, heroes, and freedom fighters with constantly increasing frequency and an aggressive bluntness.

As it is clearly seen, certain circles, who assess the events in a biased way, seek to foster the illusion that the PKK has abandoned its violent ways. It is true that, in recent years, the Turkish government worked for a resolution process to end the terrorism. However, the fact that the PKK ceased violence during the process is not true. The activities of the PKK continued even after the resolution process had begun. For example, **in just the first half of 2013, the PKK was known to have carried out 154 terrorist acts.** Among these acts were blocking roads, opening fire to the security forces who wanted to clear the road blocks, destroying work sites and construction vehicles, launching armed attacks on hydroelectric

THE ACTIVITIES OF THE PKK CONTINUED

DURING THE RESOLUTION PROCESS.

PKK silahları dağdan şehre indirdi



Aydınlık, 09.12.2013



Türkiye, 16.02.2014

ÖCALAN EYLİMİ
Kendilerini de
polis aracını da
yaktılar

The activities of the PKK continued even after the resolution process had begun. For example, in just the first half of 2013, the PKK was known to have carried out 154 terrorist acts.

Bankaya molotoflu saldırı

Fatih Bankası'nın bir çatı katında bulunan şubesi, bir grup PKK militanı tarafından molotoflu saldırıya uğradı. Saldırıya katılan militanlar, şubeye girerek binanın çatı katına çıkarak, çatıya molotoflar attılar. Saldırıya katılan militanlar, şubeye girerek binanın çatı katına çıkarak, çatıya molotoflar attılar. Saldırıya katılan militanlar, şubeye girerek binanın çatı katına çıkarak, çatıya molotoflar attılar.



Taraf, 03.03.2014

power plants, guard stations, police vehicles, exploding mines, burning down schools, extortion, and abducting workers, teachers, prosecutors, and soldiers.¹⁵⁰ Furthermore, as of June 2014, these acts showed a significant increase.

In early October 2014, the PKK attempted to lay waste to the whole of Turkey within 2 days. During this uprising, which was named '6-8 October Events', 35 cities fell into anarchy. **40 people lost their lives. 2 security officers were martyred.** 221 civilians and 139 security officers were injured. 780 buildings, including 212 school buildings, 67 police buildings, 25 district governorship buildings, 29 political party buildings, nursery schools, and the Red Crescent blood centers, and 1113 buildings in total were either burned down or damaged. In these acts of violence, many private cars, municipality cars, ambulances, and police vehicles were burned down and 1177 vehicles in total were destroyed.

The autopsy reports of the adolescent youths who were lynched to death on the streets clearly showed the spirit of rage and hatred the PKK militants harbored.¹⁵¹ Tens of stab and bullet wounds were detected on the bodies of the youngsters. One was thrown down from the 3rd floor of a building, one's body was set on fire, and another one's throat was slit. It is upsetting to see certain circles who try to raise sympathy for the PKK turn a blind eye to such atrocious activities of the PKK.

The year 2015 displayed that the PKK exploited the so-called resolution process to strengthen their terror campaign. Weapons, bombs, explosives, rocket-launchers, and anti-aircraft guns that were amassed in the cities during that process were now directed at soldiers, police, and civilians, and the PKK launched perhaps one of the biggest uprisings in its history.

The perception operation that is carried out worldwide to cover up and distort the truths about the PKK, to deceive and mislead the people can be highly systematic, extensive and in great proportion. However, the written and verbal statements given by the founder and leader of the organization, Abdullah Ocalan, at various times alone are enough to show the true and dark side of the PKK.

The PKK is a Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist Communist Organization

As we have stated, the true communist Stalinist identity of the PKK is meant to be concealed from the public so as to maintain the false sympathetic image that this group seeks to create. However, the statements made personally by the founding leader of the organization, Abdullah Ocalan, lay bare the fact that the PKK is a bloodthirsty communist structure completely devoted to the Marxist, Leninist, and Stalinist ideology. The following are some of the statements made by Ocalan in this regard:

The PKK has experienced a development in line with the Marxist-Leninist tradition. It is clear that from then on it will take shape on the basis of that legacy, which is inseparable in the way that flesh is joined to bone.¹⁵²

Lenin represented it in the 1900s, and I represent the 21st-century socialism, and I am building the new socialism by fighting real socialism and imperialism.¹⁵³

The prevailing standards in our circle are the ones of socialism and communism. In socialism, everyone is rewarded according to their efforts. This is also true within the party (the PKK), and will remain so until the foundation of the communist society.¹⁵⁴

Speaking in the founding congress of the PKK in 1978, Ocalan talked about how they took the Marxist-Leninist ideology as their guide:

The Marxist-Leninist theory must be internalized very well. The leading cadres should consult Marxism frequently and truly internalize Marxism in order to make the practice of this doctrine their starting point... We will treat communism as more of an action guide in the resolution of the political problem. We will do our part by being the agents of, being the advocates of such a doctrine and applying it, as the most important precondition of the doctrine, to the issue of political power of the country, and wielding it as a means and an action guide to tear apart the current government.¹⁵⁵

The ringleader of the separatist organization, Ocalan, stated the following in his speech dated May 1, 1982:

No matter what unsuitable conditions it may live under, it must be based on the objective force of the working class, and on Marxism-Leninism, its science and guide to action; and note that the reason for our existence is to-



Pictures of the separatist terrorist organization leader Abdullah Ocalan from the PKK party congress. Those who insist that the PKK is not a communist organization should take a closer look at these pictures. Right next to the PKK flag carrying the hammer and sickle emblem stand out the pictures of Lenin and Engels.

tally grounded in that fact... If those tribal walls, those feudal fences had not been breached, Marxism-Leninism, the modern and the most revolutionary way of thinking would never have entered our heads.¹⁵⁶

Ocalan speaks highly of the bloodthirsty communist leaders:

Here are the heroes of the proletariat, Marx and Engels. Here is its theoretical, **political genius, Lenin**, and again its **practical masters, Stalin, Ho Chi Minh, and Mao**; and many nationalist and internationalist heroes who follow their leadership. These great heroes, who aroused the awareness of freedom within people, who organized them and gave rise to the armies called the 'people's army', have a prominent place in human history.¹⁵⁷157 Kürdistan'da Halk Kahramanlığı [Popular Heroism in Kurdistan], Istanbul, March 2004, p. 87



The statements of Abdullah Ocalan show us the fact that the PKK is the most loyal follower and the most thorough practitioner of the Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist communist ideology in the 21st century.

The PKK Adopts and Employs Communist Violence and Terrorism at Its Core

Throughout this book, we have introduced you to the fundamental methods the communist movement resorts to, such as armed and bombing propaganda, terrorism, violence, revolt, rebellion, boycotting, provocation, agitation, and organizing, through numerous examples and quotes from the personal statements of the communist leaders. The perpetrators of thousands of bloody attacks and tens of thousands of murders and massacres for almost 40 years, the PKK strictly employs these communist methods. In his statements at

various times, the perpetual leader of the organization, Abdullah Ocalan, expresses this fact as follows:

Armed struggle, civil insurrection and organizing have a highly intertwined and interdependent characteristic...¹⁵⁸

We state that the armed propaganda should be the initial step toward bringing the national liberation fight to such an advanced level of war, that armed propaganda will be the principal instrument for fulfilling the duties of agitation, propaganda and organizing, and that armed propaganda will act as the foundation for building the revolutionary structure...¹⁵⁹

Ho Chi Minh says this on the subject, under the conditions facing Vietnam before 1944; ‘... We can initiate neither a guerrilla war nor a popular uprising. But we need to apply armed propaganda to prepare these.’ And this is an even clearer and more obligatory fact under the conditions of Kurdistan...¹⁶⁰

Having carried out thousands of bloody terrorist attacks, tens of thousands of murders, massacres and assassinations to this day, the PKK has been following the violence and terrorism methods that were personally introduced by Lenin in reaching its goals:

In principle we have never rejected, and cannot reject, terror. Terror is one of the forms of military action that may be perfectly suitable and even essential at a definite juncture in the battle, given a definite state of the troops and the existence of definite conditions.¹⁶¹

Without in the least denying violence and terrorism in principle, we demanded work for the preparation of such forms of violence as were calculated to bring about the direct participation of the masses and which guaranteed that participation.¹⁶²

In 1906, i.e., 11 years before the Bolshevik Revolution, Lenin wrote the following in his article, which was published in *Proletari*, advocating the methods of armed struggle, civil war, and assassination of the government officials:

A Marxist bases himself on the class struggle, and not social peace. In certain periods of acute economic and political crises the class struggle ripens into a direct civil war, i.e., **into an armed struggle between two sections of the people. In such periods a Marxist is obliged to take the stand of civil war. Any moral condemnation of civil war would be absolutely impermissible from the standpoint of Marxism.**

... **The phenomenon in which we are interested is the armed struggle.** It is conducted by individuals and by small groups. ... Armed struggle pursues two different aims, which must be strictly distinguished: **in the first place, this struggle aims at assassinating individuals, chiefs and subordinates in the army and police; in the second place, it aims at the confiscation of monetary funds both from the government and from private persons.**¹⁶³

Reading the following statements of Lenin, one will be astonished to see how he describes the present-day terrorism of the PKK:

... **to launch attacks under favourable circumstances is not only every revolutionary's right, but his plain duty. The killing of spies, policemen, gendarmes, the blowing up of police stations, the liberation of prisoners, the seizure of government funds for the needs of the uprising. . . every detach-**

ment of the revolutionary army must be ready to start such operations at a moment's notice.¹⁶⁴

The propagandists must supply each group with **brief and simple recipes for making bombs**, give them an elementary explanation of the type of the work, and then leave it all to them. Squads must at once begin military training by launching operations immediately, at once. **Some may at once undertake to kill a spy or blow up a police station, others to raid a bank to confiscate funds for the insurrection.**¹⁶⁵

All of this information shows us once again the fact that the PKK is the most loyal follower and the most thorough practitioner of the Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist communist ideology in the 21st century.

The PKK is a Vicious Enemy of Religion

Just like all communist entities, the PKK is a terrorist organization

America's New Marxist Allies Against the Islamic State

By Mark Steyn
and Paul Francisco
Special Contributor, The Heritage Foundation

Not even six months ago, David Baklan, a 24-year-old, blond, handsome young man, was a well-known and successful entrepreneur in the United States. He had just moved to the United States to start a new business.

Now the 24-year-old is a battle-hardened guerrilla, using machine guns and rocket-propelled grenades to fight Islamic State extremists in Syria and Iraq.

He has deployed to various fronts all across the self-proclaimed Kurdistan communist zone. Last summer, he was the alleged sniper in a battle against Islamic State forces in the town of Kobani. He had been fighting Islamic insurgents and conventional armies in Syria, Turkey, Iraq and Iraq—countries where an estimated 50 million Kurds live.

Mr. Baklan's journey provides a glimpse behind the remarkable rise of the Kurdistan Workers' Party, or PKK, the militant Marxist-inspired group that fights for and against Islamic State. He has been fighting in order to bring justice to regional power.

The PKK and its Syrian affiliates have emerged as Washington's most effective battlefield partners against Islamic State, also known as ISIL, even though the U.S. and its allies have for decades looked at the PKK as a terrorist group. The movement in the past has been accused of kidnapping, murder and narcotics trafficking, but fighters like Mr. Baklan have promised they would do anything to end the persecution of innocent Muslims. In fact, they have made considerable progress against an appalling and repressive regime.

U.S. war planners have been coordinating with the Syrian affiliate—the People's Defense Units, or YPG—on air and ground operations through a joint command center in northern Iraq. And in two new combat in Syria's Idlib and Latakia regions, YPG commanders are in direct contact with U.S. commanders, even to train Kurdish fighters.

"There's no reason to get involved against a well-known Kurdish ally of ours," said a senior State Department official.

By contrast, Ankara agreed only on Thursday to allow coalition airstrikes from its territory to help the President Recep Tayyip Erdogan's government overthrow the Islamic State in order to end the war in Syria.

Amerika'nın IŞİD karşısındaki yeni Marxist müttefiki



David Baklan, 24, demonstrates how to assemble his AK-47 while waiting to be called to the front lines from the base. The Kurds know what we are fighting for. They know we will give our souls for them.

A Kurdish Force Rising

The PKK, a party group with affiliates in Kurdish inhabited regions of the Midwest, is gaining ground against the Islamic State in Syria and Iraq.



But he has investigated regional alliances and created strategic bonds.

Just two years ago, President Barack Obama told Turkey the U.S. would continue to aid its battle against PKK "terrorists." The U.S. continues to show ambivalence about the PKK with Turkey, and military aid flows from the two countries of support to an American-backed FSA in Syria established by the George W. Bush administration in July Turkey fight the group.

But now, "The U.S. has become the YPG's ally and the YPG has become the U.S.'s ground force in Syria," said Steve Barlow, a former State Department advisor on Turkey now at Lehigh University.

Some senior U.S. and British diplomats said the move has come for the U.S. and other Europeans after to consider a broader partnership with the PKK. U.S. officials said Washington is unlikely to revive the PKK's long history of aid to a group led by Mustafa Talat, which has itself and other groups in Washington about its own dealings with the group.

U.S. military personnel aren't on the ground with the PKK, but they are training individual Kurdish fighters who may be able to do so. U.S. officials, and a senior U.S. intelligence official, "There are about 10,000 PKK fighters and some analysts say they are one of the best."

"It's all PKK but different branches," Mr. Baklan said. He is fighting in Iraq against Islamic State fighters against the PKK. He is fighting in Iraq against Islamic State fighters against the PKK.

"There's no reason to get involved against a well-known Kurdish ally of ours," said a senior State Department official. "There's no reason to get involved against a well-known Kurdish ally of ours," said a senior State Department official.

By contrast, Ankara agreed only on Thursday to allow coalition airstrikes from its territory to help the President Recep Tayyip Erdogan's government overthrow the Islamic State in order to end the war in Syria.

Wall Street Journal, 24.07.2015

that completely embraces all the aspects of the fundamental atheist-materialist view and philosophy of communism. Therefore, it is opposed to religion, religious institutions, and all manners of sacred values. Beyond opposing religion, it bears a deep grudge, hatred, and anger toward religion, and deems the true religions a major obstacle for and an enemy of the Marxist-communist ideals.

In the article written by Matt Bradley and Joe Parkinson and published in *The Wall Street Journal* on July 24, 2015, the PKK was forthrightly defined as “America’s Marxist allies” and the Marxist structure and ideology of the organization was elaborately explained. The statement, **“The fighters [of the PKK] often use a vocabulary of Marxist revolution honed in obligatory study of Mr. Ocalan’s writings”**¹⁶⁶ also appears in the same article.

The atheist-materialistic, anti-religious mindset of the PKK is clearly expressed in the books written and speeches made on various dates by the organization’s founder and perpetual leader, Abdullah Ocalan.

Surely Almighty God is above the following statements.

In the speech he made on September 13, 1998 in Damascus, addressing around 60-65 terrorists, Abdullah Ocalan said:

Our daughters, women, and mothers are behaving in a childish and foolish manner. ... I am putting it plainly; they have become pacified under the influence of religion.

... We have nothing to do with religion. Our people must break away from God and ideology. I broke away from God after a long struggle. I overcame God and was thus able to become Abdullah Ocalan. Islam has given our women nothing. We will replace it with socialist morality.

... I went through a serious philosophical depression in high school. I declared war on God and became semi-Divine when I emerged victorious from that war.¹⁶⁷

In his book entitled *“The Kurdish Renaissance in Art and Literature”*, Ocalan utters the following nonsense while talking about

how he embraced Marxism he has considered to be scientific since he was a child:

Even if there was a God above, He would still have led me astray. God is not fit for the Kurds either as He deceives them. The Kurds' God is misleading them. This is why I am my own deity.¹⁶⁸

In his book entitled *"From the Sumerian Clerical State towards Democratic Civilization"*, Ocalan continues to utter the same anti-religious nonsense:

Concepts such as religious speech, God, prophets, and angels are the political literature of the time.¹⁶⁹

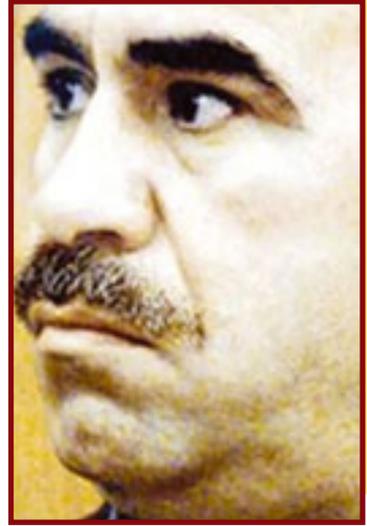
God is a kind of medieval feudal manifesto, its basic law and declaration.¹⁷⁰

Prayer itself is in general terms a piece of theater.¹⁷¹

Surely God is above such thoughts.

The religious enmity of the PKK led the organization to become a useful pawn for the desired Armageddon War in the Middle East that has been plotted by the world's deep states, the British deep state in particular, for over a hundred years. In this scheme that aims to cleanse the Middle East of Muslims, the PKK members have become voluntary mercenary militants. As a matter of fact, this is the underlying reason for the "Pro-Western" appearance recently donned by Ocalan. To be able to establish a communist Kurdistan, Ocalan realized that he could collaborate with those who dream of the Armageddon and tried to make himself look like a supporter of the West, Christians and Jews. The following is one of his most striking statements on the subject:

This nation [the Kurds], which was deemed forgettable and deniable by Islam, will take side mainly with Christians and Jews during Armageddon against all sectarian formations.¹⁷²



The meaning of these words is quite obvious. The PKK consents to being utilized as an assassin in the war that is waged against the Muslims in the Middle East by the world deep state under the pretense of radicalism. What they expect in return is the support of the world deep state for the foundation of the communist Kurdistan.

One of the recent frequently mentioned propaganda phrases is the nonsense that “the PKK is the only democratic, secular structure in the region that the West can trust”. Let alone being democratic, it is a well-known fact that the PKK responds to even the smallest criticism with murder. The PKK’s claim of being a “secularist” organization is a specifically chosen discourse in order to attract the sympathy of the Western nations. In this way, they are giving the West the message: “Opposed to the extremist, radical Islamic groups in the Middle East, we are the only ones that are like you”. However, the PKK is not secular; it is anti-religious. They bear enmity not only against Islam, but also against Christianity and Judaism. Secularity ensures people’s freedom of worship and belief, and is defined in the Qur’an in its finest, truest form. According to the Qur’an, every person is free to live their religion any way they wish. However, in the system proposed by the PKK, every person must live their lives according to the Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist dogma.

The Atheist-Communist-Irreligious PKK does not Represent the Kurdish People

Today, a deception campaign is carried out with the cooperation of certain US-Europe-oriented popular media organs, various government members, politicians, bureaucrats, academicians, and certain think-tanks. In this campaign, the lie that the PKK terrorist organization consists of “courageous freedom warriors fighting for the Kurdish people” is instilled intensively.

Since many people around the world do not have sufficient and ac-



The vast majority of our people of Kurdish origin are religious Muslims. The 80,000 people who attended the Holy Birth program held in Diyarbakir in 2009 set a beautiful example to the piety of the Kurdish community.

curate information on this incident that takes place outside of their country and agenda, they naturally fall under the influence of this social engineering and believe in these lies, giving them support. After all, the aim of this campaign boils down to ensuring the support of the international community the PKK needs, and putting the legal state forces that fight against them under pressure.

However, even without any need for extensive research, when certain concrete and basic facts are set forth it will be clearly evident that the PKK absolutely does not represent the Kurdish people; on the contrary, it is a communist-anarchist structure oppressing the Kurds, and it is merely a tool that is exploited by the Western deep states for the new design of the Middle East. It should not be forgotten that the Kurds of Northern Syria that is currently under the de facto control of the PKK are

fleeing the PKK by the masses and taking refuge in Turkey and Northern Iraq.

– First of all, it should be known that it is not possible for the religious Kurdish community to adopt the Marxist ideology of the PKK!

The vast majority of the people of Kurdish origin who live in countries like Turkey, Syria, Iraq, and Iran are religious Muslims. The Kurds are a conservative people with strong family ties who strictly adhere to their moral values and traditions.

The PKK, on the other hand, -as we expressed in the above lines- is a Marxism-oriented terrorist organization that rejects family, religion, ethics, and all kinds of spiritual values. Even though it currently hides behind the deceptive mask of a “democratic”, “libertarian” movement, the PKK has not deviated from its ideology, even in the slightest, since November 27, 1978, the date of its foundation.

– The activities, practices and amoral structure of the PKK completely contradict with the spiritual values of the Kurdish people!

Causing more than 40,000 people to be martyred through bloody terrorist attacks since the day of its foundation, the PKK's



The PKK militants wearing women's clothes

HIGH TOLL:
(PKK) Terror cost the lives of 36,345 in 31 years

**Terör 31 yılda
36 bin 345
CAN ALDI**

AĞIR BİLANÇO

PKK 15 Ağustos 1984'ten bu yana 83 bin 500 saldırı düzenledi. 7 bin 230 güvenlik görevlisi şehit düştü, 6 bin 741 sivil öldü. 22 bin 374 terörist ölü ele geçti Binlerce silah bulundu

Uyuşturucudan 3 milyar dolar

İlk eylemini 1984'te Çemdinli ve Erbil'te düzenleyen PKK'ya yönelik operasyonlarda 48 bin 435 uzun namlulu ve ağır silah, 79 bin 864 el bombası ile 43 bin 120 tabanca ve 5 milyon 78 bin 560 mermi ele geçirildi. 22 Temmuz'dan bu yana yurtiçinde ve PKK kamplarına düzenlenen hava harekâtlarında 815 teröristin etkisiz hale getirildiği de açıklandı.

PKK'nun terörizmin finansmanını uyuşturucudan kazandığı parayla karşıladığı da açıklandı. PKK'nun uyuşturucudan yıllık 1.5 ile 3 milyar dolar arasında para kazandığını söyleyen İçişleri Bakanlığı Müsteşar Yardımcısı Yücel, ANH'nin iki yazarın kitabından da örnek vererek, "PKK, kaçakçılığın içindedir. 8-12 yaş çocuklara uyuşturucu satarak silah alıyor" dedi. 2015



The PKK is treacherous and murderous. Beyond these, it is a structure that approves and legitimizes all sorts of depravity within itself.

most fundamental attribute is its being ruthless, treacherous and murderous. Moreover, 18,000 people who raised objections to, resisted or refused to support the organization were killed through intra-organizational executions. In just the second half of 2015, over 200 innocent soldiers, police officers, village guards, and civilians were perfidiously martyred by the PKK.

The PKK is also the biggest branch of Asia-Europe drug trafficking in the Middle East. The control of this drug trafficking is the largest source of revenue for the organization. Regarding the subject, the US Department of State gives the following information:

In February 2012, the U.S. Treasury Department sanctioned supporters of the Kurdistan Workers' Party (PKK) who ran significant drug trafficking networks based in Moldova and Romania, and in July, an estimated 1700 Turkish police and soldiers participated in a major crackdown on drug

trafficking by the PKK in southeast Turkey.¹⁷³

Beyond these, the PKK is a structure that approves and legitimizes all sorts of depravity and sexual perversion within itself. The militants of the PKK can go so low as to wear women's clothing and makeup so that they can flee the skirmishes if they run into any trouble.

There is nothing sensible, reasonable, or conscientious about the assertion that a bloody mafia-like organization that legitimizes murder, drug trade, debauchery, treachery, and dishonor would represent the God-fearing, pious, noble, and honorable Muslim Kurdish people. Let alone supporting the PKK, our Kurdish citizens have been opposed to such a structure with all their being for about 40 years and have stood against it to the best of their abilities.

– Having slaughtered more Kurds than Saddam, the PKK inflicts the biggest oppression on the Kurdish people.

To be able to coerce the Kurdish people that, they knew, would never voluntarily support the organization into giving their support, the PKK has resorted to all sorts of oppression, intimidation, torture, and execution methods.

In the 1980s, the PKK became notorious for the terrorist attacks they carried out against not the Turks but the Kurds. The organization adopted the spread of terror among the Kurds as its initial strategy to establish dominance. Its first target was the other Kurdish organizations and political movements that were opposed to the PKK or offered an alternative to it. After eliminating these other movements through cold-blooded murder, they turned towards the civil Kurdish people and, through their actions, they gave the message, *"Here, we are stronger than the state, if you do not side with us, we will turn your lives into a living hell"*. Even today, the PKK still holds sway over a section of the Kurdish community with the same attitude.

Following are some of the actions of the PKK targeting the Kurdish people, women and children alike:

Star, 11.06.2015



TERÖR ÖRGÜTÜ 3 BİN ÇOCUĞU DAĞA KAÇIRDI

ÖZÜM ilçesine yakın silahlı bırakmayan PKK, yeni saldırıları için yaptığı hazırlıklar kapsamında son 6 ayda 3 bin çocuğu dağa kaçırdı. Sadece İtazac ilçesinde 400 çocuğu kaçırıldı. Olsa TV'de Hasan Österik'in moderatörlüğünde "Aslında Ne Oldu?" programına telefon ile bağlanan Şanlıurfa Valisi İsmail İnan, "PKK'nin çocukları dağa kaçırdığına ilişkin haberleri duyunca çok üzgünüm. Çocuklarımızın hayatını kaybetmesine sebep olan bu teröristlerin cezalandırılması için devletimizin gerekli adımları atacağını belirttim."

6 ayda Şanlıurfa'da 3 bin çocuğu dağa kaçırıldığı açıklandı. Yalın Küçük açıklamasında şu görüşlere yer verdi: "Silahlı bırakacak bir örgüt burası yapmasın. Bu ilin sınıraramasında PKK kontrolünde bir devlet kurma çabı vardır bu. Tamamen o bölgede hiç başka bir millet yoktur sadece Atap."

Terrorist organization abducted 3,000 children

In Mardin, on August 20, 1987, the PKK militants broke into the house of a Kurdish citizen named Sehmus Arik, **killing 5 people, 2 of whom were women and 3 were children. When the 4-month-old Hamza was killed, he was sleeping in his crib.**

On July 9, 1989, in the Kirim Village of Diyarbakir, **the PKK militants who raided the village killed a 3-year-old girl.**

On May 10, 1988, in the town of Nusaybin, Mardin, the PKK killed 15 civilian Kurdish citizens, not sparing the 6 children among them. **One of the baby girls was killed while she was sleeping in her crib.**

On July 10, 1990, the PKK attacked the Cevrimli Village of Sirnak, slaughtering 27 civilians. **Of the 27 people killed by the terrorists, 11 were children.**

On August 19, 1992, in the town of Lice, Diyarbakir, the PKK attacked civilians, **shooting a baby in a crib with a machine gun.**

On October 22, 1993, in Siirt, the PKK slaughtered 22 of our Kurdish

citizens, once again targeting women and children. **In the raid, 13 of them being children and 9 being women, 22 civilians in total were brutally murdered.**

On July 24, 1994, launching a raid on the Atabinen Village of Van, the terrorists of the PKK once again targeted women and children. **The PKK murdered 6 women in their beds along with 3 babies sleeping next to them.**

The majority of the people martyred by the communist terrorist organization, who have loomed over the Kurdish people for decades, are Kurds. The organization racketeers the Kurdish tradesmen and businessmen, usurps their goods and properties, and kidnaps the children of defenseless and helpless Kurdish families at gunpoint, turning them into PKK militants. Based on information provided by the Kurdish families, the Turkish Governorship of Sanliurfa announced that in just the first half of 2015, 3,000 children in total were abducted at gunpoint.

The PKK uses Kurdish civilians as human shields in their attacks and activities. By doing so, they treacherously take cover behind our innocent citizens while increasing the Kurdish civilian casualties with the purpose of making it look as if it is supposedly a civilian commotion.

While the PKK aims to separate Turkey and found a communist Kurdistan in Turkish territory, the Kurdish people living in Turkey do not want something like this in any way. A survey that was conducted in the Kurdish-populated Southeastern region of Turkey in September 2015 showed that only 6% of the people were pro-separatists. Furthermore, the great majority of these fellow Kurdish citizens are forced to express such an opinion out of the fear caused by the oppression and threats of the PKK.

As one can clearly see, the PKK is neither a legitimate representative of the Kurdish people nor an ethnicity-based freedom movement. Imaginary notions such as “Kurdistan territories”, “the Kurdish problem”, “the Kurdish movement”, “the Kurdish freedom movement”, and “the Turkish-Kurdish war” are nothing but perception tools the PKK

and its supporters wield to reach their ultimate goal of a communist Kurdistan.

With the Turkish Republic identity cards they have, our brothers and sisters of Kurdish origin can freely live their lives throughout Turkey as first-class citizens without facing any discrimination. It is against all logic to separate our Kurdish citizens from Turkey and force them to live within the borders of a communist Kurdistan, thinking that they would want to use passports or visas to enter the lands where they have lived freely for hundreds of years.

In conclusion, the biggest harm and injustice that could be done to Kurds is to equate them to the PKK, just as certain circles that we mentioned in the beginning do, and leave them to the mercy of this treacherous gang of murderers.

The Dark Side of PKK Terrorism: Intra-Organizational Executions

One of the common characteristics of all communist leaders such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Pol Pot is their ruthless treatment of the opposition. The history of the communist countries is fraught with political assassinations, public tortures, and millions of people who were exiled to internment camps and thousands who were brutally slaughtered just because their opinions were different from the leader or the politburo. Considering himself to be the Lenin of the 21st century, Ocalan's past also carries the bloodstains of thousands of his adversaries including his comrades.

According to the testimonies of Ocalan himself, and the statements of the administrators and ex-members of the PKK, the number of people killed in intra-organizational executions ranges between 15 and 17 thousand. Some of these people were buried in the ground and shot in the head, some of them were shot before the eyes of their families and some of them were murdered through acid attacks. What is worse is that these

THE DARK SIDE OF THE PKK: INTRA-ORGANIZATIONAL EXECUTIONS

Mysterious execution in Paris



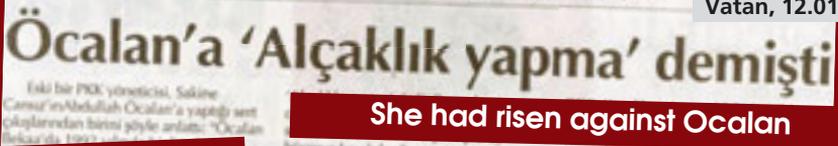
Zaman, 11.01.2013

Like all communist leaders, Ocalan's past also carries the bloodstains of thousands of his adversaries including his comrades.



Vatan, 12.01.2013

Her fiancé was executed too



Aydınlık, 21.12.2015

Bodies are to be brought to Turkey

She had risen against Ocalan



PKK executed 40 members by firing squad



Milat, 11.01.2016

PKK's unidentified murders

PKK started to execute its supporters whom they don't trust



Akşam, 04.02.2012

murders were published by pro-PKK press organs virtually with pride under a tone of “Spies received their due punishment”.

In his book entitled “Killing Your Comrade”, Aytekin Yilmaz, who was sentenced to 10 years for being a PKK member, talks about how these murders are celebrated by the PKK members through folkloric dance:

I saw them dance on two instances. One of them was in the 1990s when the guerrilla [the PKK members] raided an outpost and killed 20-30 soldiers. It appalled me. The second was when they danced after they had killed their comrades.

Some of these murders are as follows:

One of the founders of the PKK, Haki Karer of Ordu, occasionally came to the fore and bothered Ocalan. On May 18, 1977, **he was suspiciously shot in a coffee house** in Gaziantep.

The PKK Europe supervisor, Cetin Gungor, criticized the activities of the administrators in the organizational congress. **He was killed in Stockholm in 1984** on the grounds of being a spy.

After being arrested in the September 12th coup and serving 11 years in Diyarbakir Prison, Ali Riza code-named Mehmet Cimen, had a falling out with the organization’s upper echelon in Germany. He was summoned to Syria. **By the decision of the organization, he was executed by being drowned in acid in a bathtub.**

One of the founding names of the organization and the former Erzincan-Tunceli supervisor, Yildirim Merkit, was declared a spy-colaborator. **He was killed in an armed attack** in Romania.

Kani Yilmaz (Faysal Dumlayici), who was involved in the foundation phase of the organization, was deemed responsible for Ocalan not being able to find a hideout in Europe when he was captured. **He was killed in February 10, 2006 when the bomb planted in his car by two PKK agents exploded.**

Rising as high as the deputy secretary general of the PKK, Mehmet Sener was **shot by two hitmen** under the accusation of being a spy.

(Mehmet Sener was engaged to Sakina Cansiz, who was killed in Paris.)

One of the founding members of the PKK, Ali Omurcan, was **executed** in Lebanon, **after being interrogated by Cemil Bayik**.

Appointed as the first deputy secretary of the organization in the 3rd Congress of the PKK, Halil Kaya was **killed by a firing squad under the orders of Ocalan**.

Around 17 thousand people were killed in similar ways. The deaths of most of these people went down in history as unidentified murders. But their murderers were not unidentified, they were very well known. For example, the fact that the execution orders were given by Ocalan was put on record in a bill of indictment that was prepared in Germany in 1986. One of the foremost figures of the leftist movement in Turkey who spent about 18 years in prison, Ismail Besikci, explains the situation of the thousands killed by the PKK and their relatives:

The female guerilla fighters of the PKK

MEE meets female Kurdish Workers Party fighters in the mountains of Iraqi Kurdistan - and finds a diverse group united by a vision of freedom



Middle East Eye, 31.07.2015

MEE

There are hundreds of executions in the PKK like that of Mehmet Sener... Those whose daughters, sons were killed by their own friends, by the PKK, have been completely quiet, their lives have been shut down. There is no authority for these families to go to... The PKK uses the word 'democratic' frequently in organization names, articles, and speeches. By doing so, they try to give the impression of being democrats. One cannot become a democrat through the frequent use of the phrases "Democratic nation", "democratic country", "democratic autonomy", etc. There is only one criterion for being a democrat, and that is the freedom of expression. One cannot become a democrat or democratic unless the freedom of expression is realized.

As clearly seen, the immorality of the members of the PKK goes as far as to kill their own friends without even batting an eye. And it is impossible for an organization with such a mindset to establish a system that is "democratic", "ecologic", and that "cherishes women". The only system that the PKK will establish is a system that is utterly soulless, ruthless, and despotic, exactly like in the North Korea.

The PKK Does Not Regard Women Highly, But Exploits Them

The "woman" element is one of the most significant means certain Western circles use in an attempt to make the PKK supposedly look democratic, modern, and sympathetic, which we have mentioned in the previous chapters. Presenting being a PKK member as if it is an unparalleled opportunity and a source of pride for Kurdish women, these circles are planning to create a new, bright image for the PKK over the sensitive "woman" perception.

One of its latest examples is the article titled "The Female Guerrilla Fighters of the PKK", written by Eleonora Vio and published by the UK-based Middle East Eye news site on July 31, 2015. The logic of polishing the image of the organization is reflected by the term "the 'rebranded' PKK".¹⁷⁴

In the article, female guerrillas are said to have joined the PKK with the supposed purpose of fighting for their and their people's independ-

CERTAIN WESTERN CIRCLES' IMAGE OF THE FEMALE MEMBERS OF THE PKK



The "woman" element is one of the most significant means certain Western circles use in an attempt to make the PKK supposedly look democratic, modern, and sympathetic.



THE ACTUAL STATUS OF THE FEMALE MEMBERS OF THE PKK



Admission of rape by female PKK members



Habertürk, 15.11.2012

The miserable female members of PKK



Aktif Haber, 07.05.2012

Admission by a female terrorist: Ocalan raped women



Akşam, 27.05.2011

ence. The nonsense that the Turkish and Kurdish women are under oppression and captivity to the point of taking the risk to flee to the mountains and join an armed terrorist organization in order to gain their freedom

is particularly stressed. On the other hand, the article gives the message that the PKK is supposedly a great opportunity for salvation and freedom for these women. To complete the mise en scène, the “innocent” looking images of 8-10 women, who play their roles successfully, standing together, bursting with happiness and joy, laughing and joking around are scattered between the lines.

Of course many foreigners who have read this article do not know that all the women in Turkey, whether they are of Kurdish, Turkish, Laz, Circassian, or any other ethnicity, enjoy the same rights and freedoms as men. They are oblivious to the fact that women in Turkey can live freely, receive education, work, join a profession, travel, have fun ‘til their heart’s content, that they can wear whatever they want, freely marry or divorce, or easily go into politics.

Therefore, as such social engineering attempts of the media are aimed at the majority who have insufficient information on the subject, it is not difficult to create the desired public perception. However, the same media strictly refrains from mentioning the other side of the medallion.

- Are the Women of the PKK Freedom Fighters or Objects of Exploitation?

Escaping from the PKK and surrendering to the Turkish authorities in previous years, 220 terrorists, 57 of whom were women, laid bare in their statements how the female members of the organization suffered misery, privation, and physical and psychological devastation.

According to the accounts of the female PKK members who have surrendered, servitude, beatings, abasement, and rape are daily incidents for the women in the organization. The following are some striking excerpts from the remorseful statements of the female PKK militants:

Havin code-named N.D.: When I joined the militants 3 years ago, I had great expectations. But I have become a slave. I saw people kill themselves just because there were no painkillers.

Nudem code-named F.D.: In the first month of my time in the organization, I began to regret my decision. We would see our salvation in death.

Awesta code-named F.T.: I joined the organization. On my third night, I was raped by the person who forcefully got under the blanket and threatened to kill me if I did not remain silent.

Dicle code-named E.B.: At home I would take care of my eight siblings. But in the mountains, the burden of taking care of 80 people was laid on me.¹⁷⁵

As it can be seen, the truth is far from the scenario that is devised in the article in the Middle East Eye. Having joined the organization to supposedly gain their freedom, the women have to cut firewood, cook, dig shelters, serve hundreds of male terrorists, and submit to the sexual abuse by the organization's administrators all day long.

-The Leader of the PKK, Abdullah Ocalan's Outlook on Women

As the founder and the leader of the organization, Abdullah Ocalan's scornful statements about women, especially the Kurdish women, are alone sufficient to completely eradicate the lie "the PKK

holds women in high regard” that is used by Western circles as an instrument of propaganda:

The bodies of the majority of Kurdish women are dead, rotten, cold, and very graceless. Their physical form is a little bit like this, their souls are dull. They lack intellectuality... They are unable to repeat words, not even as much as a parrot does.¹⁷⁶

Again Ocalan’s statements “I have a soft spot for love. I am not ashamed of this. However, **if my doves walk away from me, they will suffer the consequences. Those who have done so suffered for it**”¹⁷⁷

As a matter of fact, in her book entitled “The Escape to Freedom”, where she writes about her life in the organization, the Dilaram code-named militant, who escaped from the PKK with her three friends and settled in Iraq, tells about how she, along with many young girls, were raped repeatedly in Abdullah Ocalan’s house in Damascus that is called “Consolidation House”.

The book, in which Dilaram tells about the experiences of 14 women who, like herself, escaped from the organization, is full of innumerable examples of the exploitation, rape, and violent practices of the PKK administrators such as Abdullah Ocalan, Cemil Bayik, and Murat Karayilan, against female militants. The fact that those who did not obey this system, regardless of being pregnant or not, were executed at the hands of other female militants under the orders of the same administrators is among the horrific memories narrated by Dilaram.

The examples are countless. However, while exploiting the woman factor for its own foul interests and disposal, the PKK continues to make use of it as a propaganda tool with great hypocrisy against the international public opinion. And certain circles, knowingly or unknowingly, are instruments to this vile scheme.

The PYD, YPG, HPG, SDG, PJAK; All of Them Are the Branches of the PKK

Today, in the north of Syria, the US and coalition forces are openly



The PYD representatives at the Italian Parliament



The YPJ commanders at the Elysée Palace in France

supporting the terrorist organization PKK's Syria extension, the PYD and its military arm, the YPG under the pretense of 'fighting against ISIS'. British in particular, a significant part of the European and the US media and their extensions in the Turkish media, constitutes the propaganda wing of this support. These propaganda wings preach to the world public opinion 24/7 the disinformation that the PYD and the YPG are different from the PKK, that they are not terrorist organizations.

However, the PYD is nothing but a mask the PKK, which is officially regarded as a terrorist organization by all these countries, dons in Syria. Overlooking what is behind this mask for their self-interests, the Western powers seem intent on keeping up the act of regarding this mask as a separate entity by allying with the PYD, which is in fact the same terrorist organization as the PKK.



The co-chairman of the PYD Salih Muslim, sharing the same table with Abdullah Ocalan



The co-chairwoman Asya Abdullah



Salih Muslim giving a speech in front of a picture of Ocalan

As a matter of fact, while defining the PKK as a terrorist organization, US Department of State Spokesperson John Kirby states on every occasion that the PYD and its military arm, the YPG, are separate entities from the PKK, that they support them and provide them with arms and equipment, and that they will continue to do so. It is already a well-known fact that the US and the coalition powers, which have been carrying out operations against the ISIS for months, have provided the PYD with tons of arms and ammunition. The fact that these weapons are directly transferred to the PKK and used in the terrorist attacks in Turkey is not a secret. Going a step further, the US currently plans to provide these aids through Incirlik; in other words, the weapons the PKK will use against Turkey will be transferred through Turkey.

Europe is not so innocent in this regard either. The PYD representatives and the YPJ commanders being officially invited to the Italian Parliament ¹⁷⁸ and the Elysée Palace ¹⁷⁹ in France and hosted at the highest-level found coverage in the press.

The PYD, Founded by the Order of Ocalan and with the Support of the Ba'ath Regime

The Syrian Ba'ath regime has always been the protector of the PKK and Abdullah Ocalan. Shortly after declaring the foundation of the PKK

PKK = PYD



PKK executive Duran Kalkan inspecting a PYD camp

The YPJ-YPG banner is seen carrying the picture of the founder of the PKK, Abdullah Ocalan, whom they consider as their leader



Terrorists of the YPJ and the YPG taking oaths of allegiance over a picture of Ocalan



The PYD's foundation anniversary celebrations

The dead bodies of PKK members who had left Qandil to fight for the YPG being buried in Qandil



in 1978, Ocalan took refuge in Syria in 1979. Despite Turkey's persistent warnings, the Ba'ath regime gave all kinds of support for the organization to grow. The majority of the terrorists who carried out countless bloody attacks in Turkey were settled in the camps in Syria. One of the most significant supporters of Ocalan was, without a doubt, the bloody intelligence of the Ba'ath regime, al-Mukhabarat.

As a result of the spiritual pressure by Turkey, in 1999, Syria expelled Ocalan from the country. The organization was consigned to al-Mukhabarat. A part of the terrorists moved to Northern Iraq and the Qandil Mountains. The fates of those who remained behind were organized by the Ba'ath regime. Under the guidance of al-Mukhabarat, a new structure was established under a new name and the control of both the assets and the members of the organization was handed over to this structure. The movement that is known today as the Democratic Union Party, i.e., PYD, is none other than the organization of Ocalan whose formation was supported by al-Mukhabarat itself in those days.

According to the official records, the PYD was established in 2003. The organization declared Ocalan its ideological leader, and Kongra-Gel (People's Congress of Kurdistan) its legal administration. Using the co-chairmanship system, the co-chairman of the PYD is Salih Muslim, who shares the same table with Ocalan, and the co-chairwoman is Asya Abdullah, one of the female militants who live in the Qandil Mountains, the headquarters of the PKK. While Salih Muslim is the face of the PYD, carrying out negotiations and making statements to the press in Europe and other countries, Asya Abdullah is the real administrator of the PYD -in Qandil.

Despite all these facts, there is another important, concrete piece of evidence that the PYD, who claims to have nothing but an ideological tie with the PKK, is not telling the truth: The PYD is an umbrella movement of the KCK. And the KCK is the upper establishment of all the PKK structures in Europe and Middle East. It is the organization that represents the so-called confederate state structure including the PKK and the

PYD; in other words, all the planned state organs of the Independent Communist Kurdistan dream. The KCK executive council represents the executive power of the so-called Independent Communist Kurdistan, and it is the so-called government of the organization. It rules over the PKK and all the armed groups and all the organizations in the region that are the sub-units of the PKK. One of the organizations under this umbrella is the PYD. Therefore, the PYD is completely a PKK extension, not only ideologically, but also structurally and materially as well; it is indistinguishable from the PKK.

The YPG Consists of Terrorists Trained in the Qandil Mountains

There are many active militants of Syrian origin among the ranks of the PKK. These militants participated in the attacks carried out in Turkey as well. The PYD and the PKK, as armed forces, are two structures that are nested within one another. The militants of Syrian origin who carry out activities within the PKK also form the core structure of the armed force of the PYD.

The armed force of the PYD is named as the YPG (People's Protection Units). Almost all the militants of the YPG, whose numbers are estimated to be between 5 and 10 thousand, received both ideological and armed training in Qandil. The true administrators of the YPG militants are the PKK leaders in Qandil. The new recruits of the organization initially undergo a Marxist-Leninist-Stalinist ideological training in Qandil. After this, they move on to armed training; the PKK leaders in Qandil provide basic military training. The training then continues in the military academies established in Afrin, Kobani, and Jazira.

– Same Terrorist Organization, Different Names

In truth, the PKK and the PYD are nothing but the same terrorist structure under different names. Today, thousands of PKK militants are

The tyranny of the PYD is no different from the PKK terrorism

The PYD is brazenly pursuing an increasingly severe genocide policy on the Kurds, Arabs and Turkmen through massacre, torture, terrorism, and exile.



Sabah, 30.10.2015



The PYD massacre in Kobani

Yeni Şafak, 30.06.2015

**Amnesty International's Syria report:
YPG is committing crime against humanity**

En Son Haber, 13.10.2015



The PYD forces the Turkmens to migrate

Turning a blind eye to the terrorist, oppressive, and genocidal acts of the PYD and supporting it is clearly a double-standard policy that is far from ethical measures.

Milat, 26.06.2015

YPG raided a Turkmen village



Sinsi plan ortaya çıktı

**PYD'DEN
DEMOGRAFİK
TEHCİR**

Sabah, 28.06.2015

Demographic deportation by the PYD

fighting in the ranks of PYD. The chain of command and the administrators of both organizations are affiliated with Qandil. Both of them regard Abdullah Ocalan, the founder of the PKK, as their leader. The first thing the PYD militants do in the villages, towns, and cities they captured is hand out Abdullah Ocalan posters and hang PKK flags.

Using different names depending on which region the PKK militants are in is merely a delusion tactic that is employed for purposes such as misleading, and causing confusion in perception. Using virtually all the letters in the alphabet, the organization constantly comes up with units, fractions and hierarchies under different names and abbreviations.

For example, the Iran branch of the PKK is called PJAK, the Syria branch is called PYD, its army is called YPG, the women militants of this army is called YPJ, the military arm of the PKK is called HPG, its youth branch is called YDG-H, and its upper-structure is called KCK. However, every single one of these is nothing but the extension of the same terrorist organization, the PKK.

The article entitled “A Personal War: America’s Marxist Allies Against ISIS”, written by Matt Bradley and Joe Parkinson, and published on *The Wall Street Journal* internet site on July 24, 2015 tells how the PKK and its extensions are actually the same terrorist organization:

The PKK says its affiliates—Syria’s YPG and groups called the PJAK in Iran and the HPG in Iraq—are separate but closely linked. PKK fighters and some analysts say they are one and the same.

“It’s all PKK but different branches,” Ms. Ruken [a PKK militant Zind Ruken who was interviewed] said, ... **“Sometimes I’m a PKK, sometimes I’m a PJAK, sometimes I’m a YPG. It doesn’t really matter. They are all members of the PKK.”**

Again in the same article, the fact that these organizations that are extensions of the PKK are established by Abdullah Ocalan himself and that they swore allegiance to him is stated as follows:

The Kurdish guerrilla groups pledge allegiance to Abdullah Ocalan, the PKK chief imprisoned on a Turkish island since 1999. From jail in 2005, he

established PKK affiliates that evolved into today's YPG, HPG and PJAK.¹⁸⁰

In April 2011, through the co-operation negotiations Ocalan conducted with Bashar al-Assad via his attorneys, the PYD was recognized by the regime and allowed to form a pro-regime, autonomous region in the north of Syria by organizing some of the Kurds there. As a result of the initiatives undertaken again by Ocalan from his cell in Imrali and the PKK administrators' traffic in Syria, the sentence of Salih Muslim, who was sentenced to death in Syria, was revoked and he was taken from the PKK encampment in Iraq and put in charge of the PYD in Syria.

To be able to maintain control of the Kurdish regions and command and train the PYD militia, about 400 senior PKK administrators were personally sent to Syria from Turkey and Iran. According to the information received from the Syrian opposition, in the last 2 years, about 10,000 PKK militants have entered Afrin through Turkey.

The statement, **"The PYD carries out a revolution in Western Kurdistan to build a democratic society. And then, we will move on to Northern Kurdistan, i.e., Turkey"** issued by the PYD in 2013 lays bare the PKK/PYD collaboration.

In short, those who established, support, administrate, and provide soldiers to the PYD are none other than the PKK. Yet, still claiming that the PYD is a structure that is different and separate from the PKK is quite a ridiculous assertion.

- The Tyranny of the PYD Is No Different from the PKK Terrorism

It is a well-known fact that the PYD and the al-Assad regime is in open cooperation. Just as in the example of Amuda massacre, the Syrian Kurds who are opposed to the regime are either executed or arrested by PYD armed forces, and subjected to prison, torture, or abuse. In many regions under PYD control, such as Afrin, the Kurdish and Arabic youth are forced to join the organization at gunpoint. Many Muslim Kurds are being executed or exiled on the grounds of being Barzani spies.

The PYD is brazenly pursuing an increasingly severe genocide policy on the Arabs and Turkmen through massacre, torture, terrorism, and exile. This was also documented in the June 2014 report of the Human Rights Watch. The Qamishli massacre perpetrated by the PYD is only one example of these atrocious practices. The PYD forced the people of Tall Abyad into exile after capturing it. The Arabs and Turkmen, who took refuge in Turkey during the war with ISIS, are still trying to be prevented from returning to their homelands by closing the borders.

While creating Kurdish cantons in Jazira and Ayn al-Arab, and the corridor in between them, the PYD also systematically altered the demographic structure of these regions. They force the Turkmen and Arabs into migrating from the lands that they have been living for a thousand years and settle their own PKK militants in their stead.

As for the ultimate goal, the PKK is planning to form the northern part of Communist Kurdistan by separating the southeast region from Turkey while the PYD is, likewise, in pursuit of creating the southern part of Communist Kurdistan by separating the territory from Iraq and Syria. To that end, the terrorist organization in question does not refrain from committing all kinds of terrorism, murders, and crimes against humanity.

As can be seen, the nonsense that “the PYD and the PKK are different” does not reflect the truth. When the mafia conducts a raid somewhere, the one who commits the murder, the one who watches the door, and the one who drives the car are all the perpetrators of the same crime. All of them are accomplices to the same crime and members of the same mafia organization. Therefore, the groups that act under the leadership of Ocalan are all parts of the same terrorist organization and equally responsible for his crimes against humanity.

When the truth is that obvious, regarding the PKK as a terrorist organization on one hand, while turning a blind eye to the terrorist, oppressive, and genocidal acts of the PYD for the sake of regional interests, and deeming the organization a legitimate party and supporting it on the other hand, is clearly an utterly contradictory and a double-standard policy that is far from ethical measures. With these unprincipled poli-

cies, it will not be a remote possibility to see the Communist Kurdistan that is planned to be founded in the region at all costs gravitate toward undesirable and dangerous communist alliances in the near future that will inevitably disappoint its supporters.

For extensive and detailed information on the subject, you can refer to my books, *“The Danger of a Communist Kurdistan”* and *“America’s Failure to Perceive the PKK”*.

Conclusion

Communism is still alive, and in our very midst. Communist or Socialist parties will not find it difficult to rise to power in most of Eastern Europe or even in some Western European countries. If they find appropriate social conditions (as when the Nazis came to power in Germany’s elections of 1933), they may establish a lasting Communist regime. Russia experienced a development from Communism to Fascism and then towards savage capitalism, but since the boundary isn’t clear-cut between these ideologies, Russia can return to Communism as the result of a social movement. China still regards Maoism’s ideas as the only truth, and Communism’s influence is still strongly evident in Cuba, North Korea, and Vietnam.

Today’s Communism, implementing the “one step forward two steps back” tactic, has taken a step back. It continues its activities in various countries under different names, while giving the impression that it presents no threat to the world. **But by supporting the “conflict” argument of dialectical materialism, Communism is an endless fountain of bloodshed.** Under whatever appearance or name, still it regards the dialectical conflict as an inevitable law of history and can bring humanity nothing but bring cruelty and misery.

The precaution that must be taken is to dry up the Communist swamp that produces this danger. Otherwise, struggling with the mosquitoes (that is, with Communist supporters) one by one will be of no avail. So long as the swamp is not dried up, the mosquitoes will continue to hatch at an increasing rate.

Following this analogy, how is the “swamp” to be dried up?

The common support for Marxists, Marxist-Leninists, Maoists or any other version of Communism (even Fascism) is Darwin’s theory of evolution. As we have seen, Marx called this theory the “basis in natural science for the class struggle in history.” Engels considered Darwin the equal of Marx, from the point of view of his dialectical materialist doctrine. Lenin and Trotsky were each influenced by Darwin and after reading him, the young Stalin—studying to be a clergyman—became an atheist. Maoism’s and Chinese Communism’s intellectual foundations are rooted in Darwinism.

The Marxist student movement that shook the world in 1968 was inspired by Herbert Marcuse, an ideologue influenced by Darwinism and particularly by Darwin’s idea of the “struggle for existence.”¹⁸¹ The list of Socialists who accepted Darwin as a guide would include a wide spectrum of names, including the revisionist Marxists Karl Kautsky and Eduard Bernstein, and the founder of the famous Fabian Society that is regarded as the source of the English left.¹⁸²

Without Darwinism, Communism would not exist. Therefore, the only antidote for the Communism that cost the lives of more than 100 million in the 20th century alone, and which is now reorganizing and strengthening in secret, is to refute Darwinism’s scientific and philosophical ideas. Once it is established that Darwinian theory is completely bankrupt in terms of science—that living things did not come to be through evolution, but that God created them perfectly—then neither Marx, Lenin, nor Mao, nor the militants who attach posters to their walls and who execute acts of bloodshed, can remain.

By eradicating the deceit of Darwinism, wells of bloodshed like Communism will be destroyed. People will return to God, our true Creator and Lord, and live according to the moral values He has taught. Then, as is commanded in Verse 2:208 of the Qur’an, people will enjoy peace and security:

You who believe! Submit all of you to God and do not follow in the footsteps of satan. He is an outright enemy to you.

WARNING

The chapter you are about to read reveals a crucial life secret. It should be read attentively and thoroughly, for it is concerned with a subject that is liable to make a fundamental change in one's outlook toward the external world. The subject of this chapter is not merely a point of view, a different approach, or a traditional philosophy. It is a fact which everyone, believers and non-believers, must admit to and which has been proven by science today.

The Important Reality that Invalidates Materialism

At the root of the Communists' nightmare of anguish throughout the 20th century lies the Darwinists' materialist creed. Blindly accepting materialist philosophy, Communists regard everything as composed of matter only, rejecting the idea that human beings have spirits. In the same way, their adoption of Darwin's theory of evolution led them to qualify human beings as no more than "advanced animals."

This and the following chapter will explain why this ideology is unsound. First off, we'll consider a very important reality that invalidates the very foundation of the materialist dogma that regards everything as being composed of matter. The second chapter demonstrates Darwinism's invalidity from a scientific standpoint, showing that human beings have always existed on this Earth as humans—distinct from animals—and have a spirit and consciousness God has given them.

First of all, let's take a short look at the system of thought that holds matter as absolute, denying the existence of anything else. As a result of this flawed logic, materialists reject the obvious existence of God (surely God is beyond that) and cannot conceive that all things continue to exist by God's will. Materialists' warped philosophy stems from this flawed conception, and is described in the Qur'an (23:37) as the materialists themselves might express it: **"What is there but our life in this world? We die and we live and we will not be raised again."** Another verse (30:7) describes the great error of these people who deny God and the afterlife: **"They know an outward aspect of the life of this world but are heedless of the hereafter."**

Why did materialism fall into this error, which gave rise to such

flawed conceptions? One reason is that never in their lives have they realized a very important reality. And not being aware of it, they believe that their entire lives are limited by the material world. Therefore, their entire relation to the world is dominated by ambition. In the following pages, we will reveal this important reality, of which godless people are unaware.

The Real Face of Matter

We are about to demonstrate a reality that invalidates the roots of materialist thought: not a philosophy or ideology; but a technical reality that everyone inhabits whether he knows it or not, which has been proved by various branches of science. If approached with care and sincerity, without prejudice, it is very easy to understand. This reality can be summarized like this: **“All material existence that form us and our environment is a totality of conception. The concept of what we call “matter” is like a dream, conceivable only as an image in our minds. We can never have any connection with its original that exists outside us.”**

The “reality behind matter” is not formerly unknown and only newly discovered. Throughout history, God has sent apostles and other deeply aware, thoughtful people to proclaim this reality, which is alluded to in a number of verses of the Qur’an and plays a key role in interpreting still other verses. Texts containing portions of these individuals’ proclamations have come down to us today; while various degenerated forms of the true religion—whose original revelations have been distorted—have sought to preserve this reality as a mystical secret.

One can find this reality in surviving texts of Zoroastrianism, Buddhism, Taoism, Judaism and Christianity. Ancient Greek philosophers such as Pythagoras and Plato (especially in his Allegory of the Cave), the Eleatic school of philosophy, and a number of the thinkers who followed them all expounded one aspect of this question. In later periods, it has been related and taught by people who, under the influence of differing viewpoints and various inter-

pretations, have thought about it deeply and arrived at the truth.

Those who claim that matter is the one absolute principle of existence, tried to cover up this reality. But George Berkeley, the Irish theologian and philosopher, raised this question again in the 18th century and in so doing, changed the world of ideas after him.

Because materialists—especially Bertrand Russell, the most passionate spokesman of this school—could not refute Berkeley philosophically, they attempted to insult and slander him. Even though Russell was the most representative thinker in materialist circles and the strongest defender of this view, he couldn't disregard this truth. In *The Problems of Philosophy*, he admitted that: "Berkeley retains the merit of having shown that the existence of matter is capable of being denied without absurdity, and that if there are any things that exist independently of us they cannot be the immediate objects of our sensations."¹⁸³

However much Russell might claim the opposite, in his statement above, he basically could not deny this reality, but even openly states that he accepts it.

Actually not only Russell's outlook, but the entire materialist philosophy is about to collapse. As we step into the 21st century, modern developments in physics, quantum physics, astronomy, psychology and anatomy and other branches of science are deeply discomfiting those who espoused the old materialist view of the world. The study of fossils and research conducted in areas like genetics have caused the theory of evolution to collapse. Research in optics and psychology have helped solve the mystery of our cognitive system; as a result of advances in astronomy, the Big Bang theory—proposing that the universe and matter had a beginning—has become generally accepted. Research into atoms and sub-atomic particles has turned classical physics inside out, proving the theory of relativity—that time itself is relative.

Countless scientific discoveries have confirmed the existence of God and His eternal sovereignty over the whole universe, leaving with no recourse those materialist thinkers who represent fanaticism and prejudice. Their powerlessness also continues today. On television, in schools, and at lectures, we encounter scientists and thinkers

who feign ignorance of the fact that we can't get in touch with the external world, that our experience is composed of perceptions felt in our brain; and proceed not to inform people of the truth, even behaving as if it did not exist. But ignoring the truth is no solution. Let us examine this reality a little more closely.

What We Perceive As Outside Is Actually Inside Ourselves

Stimuli such as light, sound, smells, tastes and textures from objects assumed to exist in the external world are carried through nerves to sensory centers in the brain. All these stimuli consist of electric signals. During the process of sight, for example, light rays (photons) radiating from the exterior world reach the retina at the back of the eye, which transforms them through a series of processes into electric signals. These signals are transferred along nerves to the center of vision at the rear of the brain. Thus, the colorful, bright, three-dimensional world is perceived within this center of only a few cubic centimeters.

The same process also enables the other senses. Tastes are transformed into electric signals by cells on the tongue's surface. Smells are transformed into electric signals by cells in the epithelium of the nose. Special sensors lodged under the skin transform impulses of touch (such as feelings of firmness or softness) into electric signals, and a special mechanism in the ear transforms sounds in a similar way. All these signals are sent to respective centers in the brain, where they are finally perceived.

To clarify the point, assume you are holding a cup of coffee. Receptors under your skin transform the cup's hardness and heat into electric signals and send them to your brain. Simultaneously, the coffee's strong smell, its taste and dark brown color all become signals sent to the brain. The clink when the cup touches the table is perceived by your ears and sent to the brain as an electric signal. All these perceptions are interpreted in the relevant brain centers, working harmoniously with one another. As a cumulative result of these impulses, you sense yourself drinking a cup of coffee.

Anyone who sits in a room, watching television or dining with his family, experiences a great miracle, even though he is unaware of it.



Sitting with his family, watching television, a person is actually at the presence of a great miracle. The miracle is that every image the people sitting in the room see is actually in each person's brain. Is the person in the room, or vice versa?

The image of four surrounding walls is, in reality, within that person's brain.

That being the case, are you in the room, or is the room inside you?

Most people are unaware of this great truth, assuming themselves to be sitting in a room, watching television or chatting with their family. Those who do grasp this fact, on the other hand, pretend not to understand this miracle, since they fear it. Yet this fact of which they plead ignorance is undeniable, confirmed by science. Stimuli reaching the eye from the room's four walls, the pictures or paintings on them, the television, carpet, furniture, and light on the ceiling are all transformed by the retina's cells into electrical currents, then transmitted to the visual center in the brain. A person perceives the image of the house, which he thinks he is in, in a tiny space in the rear of his brain.

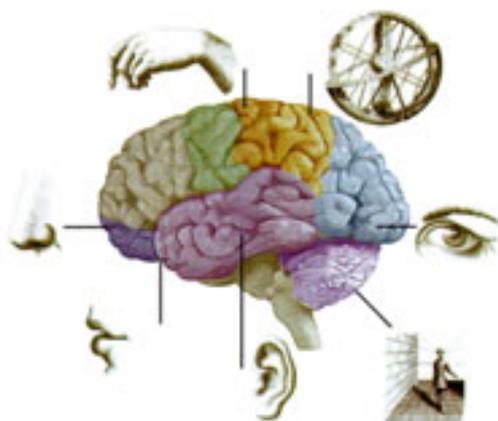
Never in his whole life can he move outside this space; never can he see another image, apart from the one on the "screen" in his head. He can never hear a sound apart from those transmitted to his brain. A person lives out his whole life within this small, bony room.

Everything we see around us is the work of electrical signals producing an image in our brain. To explain this more clearly, imagine that you are looking at the bowl of fruit on a dinner table. When light rays from it reach your eyes, several operations come into play: The rays, converted into electrical stimuli, are transmitted by nerves to your brain's visual center. In this way we can say that we see "fruits of various colors," as can easily be found in any biology or physiology textbook. But what is most amazing is that the visual center is a place of complete darkness. Actually there is no screen in the brain: When electrical stimuli come from the table, no image is formed in the visual center. When we say we see the table and the fruit on it, we are actually seeing electric signals transmitted in total darkness.

Here we meet a fact.

What we call the visual center is composed of fat, protein and nerves. It cannot perceive incoming electrical signals as images by these. In that case, **who is it that sees the electric signals in the darkness of the brain without the need for eyes?**

This is what materialism, with its lying attempts to explain everything in terms of basic matter, can never understand. What leads materialists definitely into a blind alley is an extraordinary reality that **most people cannot conceive of**. In the darkness of our brain is a being that need no eyes to see a table clearer than one projected on the finest television—three-dimensional, life-like and indistinguishable from the original.



Throughout his life, a person cannot leave this space; cannot see any images in his brain; cannot hear any noises apart from those perceived in his brain. A person's whole life transpires within this little room.



Light rays from the table reach our eyes, where they are turned into electrical stimuli transmitted by nerves to our brain's visual center. There is no actual screen in our brain, of course: Electrical stimuli coming from the table do not form an actual image in the visual center. We say that we see the table with the colorful fruit on it, but we actually see the electrical signals reaching the pitch darkness inside our brain.

What sees this perfect image is also what separates human beings from animals and all other animate and inanimate things is the Spirit that God "breathed into" them when He created them. In the Qur'an (15: 28-30), God reveals the existence of the "spirit" in these words:

When your Lord said to the angels, "I am creating a human being out of dried clay formed from fetid black mud. When I have formed him and breathed My Spirit into him, fall down in prostration in front of him!" Then the angels prostrated all together, every one of them.

Copies Indistinguishable from the Originals

Miraculously, the perceptions of the spirit are completely the same as reality. Despite the fact that the spirit has nothing to do with material originals, but only with electrical signals reaching the brain, it sees shapes and colors and feels hardness and texture, just as they are in reality. So clear are these impressions that he's convinced that he's seeing and touching the original.

For example, a swimmer in the sea's cool, blue waters is actually immersed in a great miracle. He thinks he is swimming in the water, but has never emerged from the darkness inside his brain. From the moment he entered the water, every stimulus entering his body is

immediately converted by the cells into electrical current and transmitted to his brain. At this point, something miraculous happens: the spirit, with no arms or legs to stroke with or feel the wetness, senses that water is touching his skin and buoying him up.

However, the person never has any connection with the color of the water, its temperature, and the sound of the waves—all these things are inside the human brain. **A person really has no connection with the original of even his own body that exists in the external world;** but only perceives electrical signals from inside it. Even though this miraculous reality is taught in schools and written about in textbooks, many people are not aware of this extraordinary reality; and most of those who are aware of it do not want to understand it.

Have you ever considered that all the material things you know in this world—your house and belongings, spouse and children, your parents and colleagues—are perceived as images that occur in the darkness of your brain?



The Reality that Materialists are Afraid to Understand

In light of this extraordinary and exciting knowledge, consider that all the material things you know in this world—your house and belongings, spouse and children, your parents and colleagues—are perceived as images that occur in the darkness of your brain. Has it ever occurred to you that you are fixed to an image that occurs in your brain, you can never see the outside, you can see the things listed above only in your brain and you can never get outside this small world?

If the materialists—who deny the existence of the spirit, believing that matter is the only reality—accepted this obvious truth, **they would have to throw aside all the principles and goals on which they've based their lives.** Angered by this great miracle, they have resorted to many methods to attack it and made irrational claims to obfuscate the facts. Some materialists pound tables with their fists or kick walls to convince themselves that matter is not a perception. Other materialists may claim that a **bus hitting someone is no mere perception, but objectively "real."** They want to escape the understanding that all feelings of pain from the impact are already perceptions formed in the brain; the victim has never been in contact with the "actual" bus. Again, **all the sensations of the blow are perceived in the darkness of the brain, by the human spirit.**

The Huge Trap into Which Materialists Have Fallen

Materialist philosophy has always existed throughout history. Very assured of themselves, materialists revolted against God Who created them and maintained that since matter had no beginning nor end, it couldn't possibly have been created. Denying God out of their arrogance, they took refuge in matter which they held to have the only "real" existence. So confident were they in their arrogance and denial that they believed that no argument put forth could ever disprove it. That's why the facts regarding the real nature of matter surprised them so much. Suddenly it destroyed the very basis of their philosophy—matter, on which they based all their lives—and left no

ground for further debate. They saw the material world, in which they so blindly believed in, trusted and relied, taken away and could do nothing about it. **Since no human being actually sees the reality of matter that exists outside us, hears real sounds, or smells genuine scents, how can we talk of materialism?**

One of the attributes of God is His plotting against the unbelievers, as stated in the Qur'an, verse (8: 30):

They plot and plan, and God too plans; but the best of planners is God.

God entrapped materialists by letting them assume that matter exists and in so doing, humiliated them in an unseen way. Materialists grew arrogant against God by relying on their possessions, status, rank in society. They revolted against God by being boastful (surely God is beyond that) and adding to their unbelief by relying totally on matter. Yet, they were so lacking in understanding that they failed to realize that God encompasses them. In the Qur'an (52: 42), God reveals the state to which unbelievers' thick-headedness leads them: **"Or do they intend a plot [against you]? But those who defy God are themselves involved in a Plot!"**

This is most probably the biggest defeat in history. While growing arrogant of their own accord, materialists have been tricked and suffered a serious defeat in the war they waged against God by devising a monstrous thing against Him.

In another verse (24: 39), God says: **"But the disbelievers, their deeds are like a mirage in sandy deserts, which the man parched with thirst mistakes for water; until when he comes up to it, he finds it to be nothing."** Materialism, too, becomes a "mirage" for the rebellious when they seek to depend on it. Just as stated in this verse; they find it to be an illusion. God has deceived them with such a mirage, beguiling them into perceiving this whole collection of images as real.

All those eminent professors, astronomers, biologists, physicists and others, regardless of their rank and post, are simply deceived and humiliated for having taken matter as their god. Assuming a collection of images to be absolute, they based their philosophy and ideology on them, and involved themselves in serious discussions. They

deemed themselves to be wise enough to offer an argument about the truth of the universe and, more importantly, adopted a so-called “intellectual” dispute about God, Who explains their limited intelligence in the Qur’an (3: 54): **“And [the disbelievers] plotted and planned, and God too planned, and the best of planners is God.”**

From some plots, it may be possible to escape. But there is no way to avoid God’s plan against the disbelievers. They can never find a helper other than God. As God states in the Qur’an (4: 173), **“They shall not find for them other than God a patron or a help.”**

For materialists, realizing this fact is no doubt the worst possible thing, because it leaves them all alone with God. Thus, they understand that God is always with them and He encompasses all things. With verse 74: 11 of the Qur’an, God calls us to remember that each human is, in truth, totally alone in His Presence: **“Leave Me alone, [to deal] with the [creature] whom I created alone!”**

This remarkable fact is repeated in many other verses:

And behold! You come to us alone [individually] as We created you for the first time: you have left behind you all [the favors] which We bestowed on you. (Qur’an, 6: 94)

And each one of them will come unto Him on the Day of Resurrection, alone. (Qur’an, 19: 95)

In another sense, it is stated in these verses that those who take matter as their god have, nonetheless, come from God and will return to Him. They have submitted their wills to God, whether or not they wanted to. Now—however unwilling they may be to realize it—they await the Day of Judgment, when every one of them will be called to account.

LENIN COMMANDED HIS COMRADES, "DO NOT THINK, OR ELSE YOU WILL BELIEVE."

The world to which we're connected is composed not of matter, but perceptions. Because this fact knocked the foundations from under materialist philosophy, its ideologues are very uncomfortable and try not to think about it, even recommending that their colleagues not think about it either. Chief among them is Lenin. In *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism*, a book he wrote a century ago, he warned that materialists should not think about this subject, else they might become "caught up" in religion:

Once you deny the objective reality [that is] given us in sensation, you have already lost every weapon against fideism [reliance on faith alone], for you have slipped into agnosticism or subjectivism—and that is all that fideism requires. A single claw ensnared, and the bird is lost. And our Machists [an adherent of Machism, developed by the Austrian philosopher Mach, one of the leaders of modern positivism], have all become ensnared in idealism, that is, in a diluted, subtle fideism; they became ensnared from the moment they took "sensation" not as an image of the external world, but as a special "element." It is nobody's sensation, nobody's mind, nobody's spirit, nobody's will. (V. I. Lenin, *Materialism and Empirio-criticism*, Progress Publishers, Moscow, 1970, pp. 334-335))



As this quote shows, the only thing materialists can do about the "real nature of matter" is to avoid thinking about it!—the clearest indication that the myth of materialism derives its strength only from people's self-deception.

The Importance of the Subject

It is of the utmost importance to understand correctly the secret beyond matter explained in this chapter. **Mountains, plains, flowers, people, seas—briefly everything we see and everything that God informs us in the Qur'an that exists and that He created out of nothing is created and does indeed exist.** However, people cannot see, feel or hear the real nature of these beings through their sense organs. What they see and feel are only their copies that appear in their brains. This is a scientific fact taught at all schools of medicine. The same applies to the book you are reading now; you can not see nor touch the real nature of it. The light coming from the original book is converted by some cells in your eyes into electrical signals, which are then conveyed to the visual center in the back of your brain. This is where the view of this book is created. In other words, you are not reading a book which is before your eyes through your eyes; in fact, this book is created in the visual center in the back of your brain. The book you are reading right now is a “copy of the book” within your brain. The original book is seen by God.

It should be remembered, however, that the fact that the matter is an illusion formed in our brains does not “reject” the matter, but provides us information about the real nature of the matter: that no person can have connection with its original. Moreover, the matter outside is seen not

just by us, but by other beings too. The angels God delegated to be watchers witness this world as well:

And the two recording angels are recording, sitting on the right and on the left. He does not utter a single word, without a watcher by him, pen in hand! (Qur'an, 50:17-18)

Most importantly, God sees everything. He created this world with all its details and sees it in all its states. As He informs us in the Qur'an:

... Heed God and know that God sees what you do. (Qur'an, 2:233)

Say: "God is a sufficient witness between me and you. He is certainly aware of and sees His servants." (Qur'an, 17:96)

It must not be forgotten that God keeps the records of everything in the book called Lawh Mahfuz (Preserved Tablet). Even if we don't see all things, they are in the Lawh Mahfuz. God reveals that He keeps everything's record in the "Mother of the Book" called Lawh Mahfuz with the following verses:

It is in the Source Book with Us, high-exalted, full of wisdom. (Qur'an, 43:4)

**... We possess an all-preserving Book. (Qur'an, 50:4)
Certainly there is no hidden thing in either heaven or Earth which is not in a Clear Book. (Qur'an, 27:75)**

THE DECEPTION OF EVOLUTION

Darwinism, in other words the theory of evolution, was put forward with the aim of denying the fact of Creation, but is in truth nothing but a failed, unscientific nonsense. The theory of evolution has its origins in pagan superstitions dating back to the time of ancient Egypt and Sumeria. Like these superstitions, the theory of evolution explains the origin of the universe and life through coincidences, and it has nothing to do with science. This theory, which claims that life emerged through coincidences from inanimate matter, was invalidated by the scientific evidence demonstrating the miraculous order in the universe and in living things, as well as by the discovery of about 700 million fossils revealing that evolution never happened. Furthermore, the theory of evolution is incapable of explaining the formation of even a single protein, the main building block of life. Science has proven that it is impossible for a protein to come into existence through coincidences. In this way, the fact that God created the universe and the living things in it has been confirmed by science as well. The worldwide propaganda carried out today to keep the theory of evolution alive is based solely on the distortion of scientific facts, biased interpretation, and lies and falsehoods disguised as science.

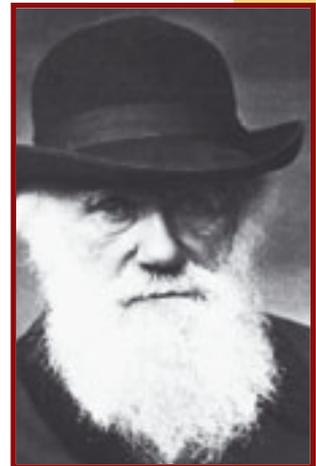
Yet this propaganda cannot conceal the truth. The fact that the theory of evolution is the greatest deception in the history of science has been expressed more and more in the scientific world over the last 20 to 30 years. Research carried out after the 1980s in particular revealed that the claims of Darwinism are totally unfounded and this fact has been stated by a large number of scientists. Many scientists from such different fields as biology, biochemistry, paleontology, genetics, zoology and archeology recognize the invalidity of Darwinism and explain the origin of life through the fact of Creation.

We have examined the collapse of the theory of evolution and the proofs of Creation in great scientific detail in many of our works, and are continuing to do so. Given the enormous importance of this subject, it will be of great benefit to summarize it here.

CHALLENGES THAT DEVASTATE DARWIN

As a pagan doctrine going back as far as ancient Egypt and Sumeria, the theory of evolution came to the fore most extensively once more in the nineteenth century. The most important development that made it the top topic of the world of science was the publication of Charles Darwin's *The Origin of Species* in 1859. In this book, Darwin in his own way opposes the fact that God created different living species on Earth separately, for he erroneously claimed that all living beings had an imaginary common ancestor and had diversified over time through small changes.

Darwin's theory was not based on any concrete scientific finding; as he also accepted, it was just an "assumption". Moreover, as Darwin confessed in the long chapter of his



Charles Darwin

book titled, "Difficulties on Theory," the theory failed in the face of many critical questions.

Darwin invested all his hopes in new scientific discoveries, which he expected would solve these difficulties. He indicated this expectation again and again in his book. However, contrary to his expectations, scientific findings expanded the dimensions of these difficulties and refuted the basic assumptions of the theory one by one.

The defeat of Darwinism in the face of science can be reviewed under three basic headings:

- 1) The theory cannot explain how life originated on Earth.
- 2) There is no scientific finding that indicates the "evolutionary mechanisms" proposed by the theory have any evolutionary power at all.
- 3) The fossil record proves the exact opposite of what the theory suggests.

In this section, we will examine these three basic points in general outlines:

THE FIRST INSURMOUNTABLE STEP: THE ORIGIN OF LIFE

The theory of evolution posits that all living species evolved from a single living cell that emerged haphazardly on Earth 3.8 billion years ago, supposedly having appeared as a result of coincidences. How a cell comprising a wide range of organelles such as vacuoles, mitochondria, lysosomes and Golgi apparatus could come into existence in a puddle of mud, how a single cell could generate millions of complex living species and, if such an evolution really occurred, why traces of it cannot be observed in the fossil record are some of the questions that the theory cannot answer. However, first and foremost, we need focus on the first step of the supposed evolutionary process. **How did the aforementioned "first cell" originate?**

Since the theory of evolution ignorantly denies Creation, it main-

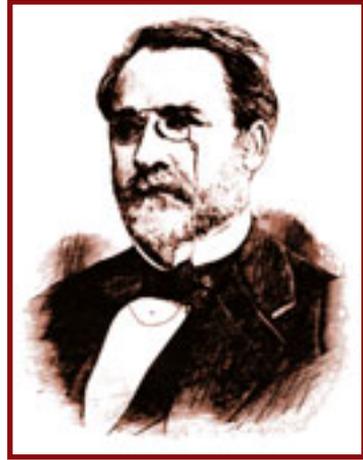
tains that the “first cell” originated as a product of blind coincidence within the laws of nature, without any plan or arrangement. According to the theory, inanimate matter must have haphazardly produced a living cell out of nowhere. Such a claim, however, is inconsistent with the most unassailable rules of biology.

“LIFE COMES FROM LIFE”

In his book, Darwin never referred to the origin of life. That is because the primitive understanding of science in his time rested on the assumption that living beings had a very simple structure. Since medieval times, spontaneous generation, which asserts that non-living materials came together to form living organisms, had been widely accepted. In that period, it was commonly believed that insects came into being from food leftovers, and mice from wheat. Interesting experiments were conducted to prove this theory. Some wheat was placed on a dirty piece of cloth, and it was believed that mice would originate from it after a while.

Similarly, maggots developing in rotting meat were assumed to be evidence of life originating from inanimate materials. However, **it was later understood that worms did not appear on meat spontaneously, but were carried there by flies in the form of larvae, invisible to the naked eye.** At the time Darwin wrote *The Origin of Species*, the belief that bacteria could come into existence from non-living matter was widely accepted in the world of science.

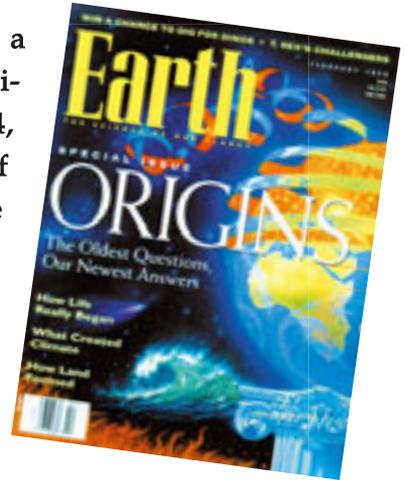
However, **five years after the publication of Darwin’s book, Louis Pasteur announced his results, after long studies and experiments,**



Through his experiments, Louis Pasteur invalidated the idea that “life can emerge from inanimate matter,” on which the theory of evolution is based.

which disproved spontaneous generation, a cornerstone of Darwin's theory. In his triumphal lecture at the Sorbonne in 1864, Pasteur said: "Never will the doctrine of spontaneous generation recover from the mortal blow struck by this simple experiment." (Sidney Fox, Klaus Dose, *Molecular Evolution and The Origin of Life*, W. H. Freeman and Company, San Francisco, 1972, p. 4.)

For a long time, advocates of the theory of evolution resisted Pasteur's findings. However, as the development of science unraveled the complex structure of the cell of a living being, the idea that life could come into being coincidentally faced an even greater impasse.



As accepted also by the latest evolutionist theorists, the origin of life is still a great stumbling block for the theory of evolution.

FUTILE EFFORTS IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

The first evolutionist who took up the subject of the origin of life in the twentieth century was the renowned Russian biologist Alexander Oparin. With various theses he advanced in the 1930s, he tried to prove that a living cell could originate by chance. These studies, however, were doomed to failure, and Oparin had to make the following confession:

Unfortunately, however, the problem of the origin of the cell is perhaps the most obscure point in the whole study of the evolution of organisms. (Alexander I. Oparin, Origin of Life, Dover Publications, New York, 1936, 1953 and 2003 (reprint), p. 196)

Evolutionist followers of Oparin tried to carry out experiments to solve this problem. The best-known experiment was carried out by the American chemist Stanley Miller in 1953. Combining those gases he alleged to have existed in the primordial Earth's atmosphere in an

experimental set-up, and adding energy to the mixture, Miller synthesized several organic molecules (amino acids) present in the structure of proteins.

Barely a few years had passed before it was revealed that **this experiment, which was then presented as an important step in the name of evolution, was invalid, for the atmosphere used in the experiment was very different from the real Earth conditions.** (“New Evidence on Evolution of Early Atmosphere and Life,” *Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society*, vol. 63, November 1982, 1328-1330)

After a long silence, **Miller, himself confessed that the atmosphere medium he used was unrealistic.** (Stanley Miller, *Molecular Evolution of Life: Current Status of the Prebiotic Synthesis of Small Molecules*, 1986, p. 7)

All the evolutionists’ efforts throughout the twentieth century to explain the origin of life ended in failure. The geochemist Jeffrey Bada, from the San Diego Scripps Institute, accepted this fact in an article published in *Earth* magazine in 1998:

One of the facts nullifying the theory of evolution is the astonishingly complex structure of life. The DNA molecule located in the nucleus of cells of living beings is an example of this. The DNA is a sort of databank formed of the arrangement of four different molecules in different sequences. This databank contains the codes of all the physical traits of that living being. When the human DNA is put into writing, it is calculated that this would result in an encyclopedia made up of 900 volumes. Unquestionably, such extraordinary information definitively refutes the concept of coincidence.



Today as we leave the twentieth century, we still face the biggest unsolved problem that we had when we entered the twentieth century: How did life originate on Earth? (Jeffrey Bada, Earth, February 1998, p. 40)

THE COMPLEX STRUCTURE OF LIFE: NOT EVEN A SINGLE PROTEIN CAN COME INTO EXISTENCE BY CHANCE

The primary reason why evolutionists ended up at such a great impasse regarding the origin of life is that even those living organisms Darwinists deemed to be the simplest have outstandingly complex features. The cell of a living thing is more complex than all our man-made technological products. **Today, even in the most developed laboratories of the world, not even a single protein of a cell, let alone a living cell itself, can be produced by bringing non-living materials together.**

The conditions required for the formation of a cell are too great in quantity to be explained away by mere coincidence. However, there is no need to explain the situation with too many details. Evolutionists are at a dead-end even before reaching the stage of the cell. That is because the **probability of just a single protein, an essential building block of the cell, coming into being by chance is mathematically "0"**.

The main reason for this is the need for other proteins to be present if one protein is to form, and this completely eradicates the possibility of chance formation. This fact by itself is sufficient to eliminate the evolutionist claim of chance right from the outset. To summarize,

1. Proteins cannot be synthesized without enzymes, and enzymes are all proteins.

2. Around 60 proteins assuming the task of an enzyme need to be present for a single protein to be synthesized. Therefore, proteins are essential for proteins to exist.

3. DNA manufactures the protein-synthesizing enzymes. Proteins cannot be synthesized without DNA. DNA is therefore also needed for proteins to form.

4. All the organelles in the cell have important tasks in protein synthesis. In other words, for proteins to form, a complete and fully functioning cell needs to exist with all its organelles.

Evolutionist science writer Brian Switek admitted that the origin of life remains to be unaccountable by evolutionists as follows:

How life began is one of nature's enduring mysteries. (Brian Switek, "Debate bubbles over the origin of life", Nature, February 13, 2012)

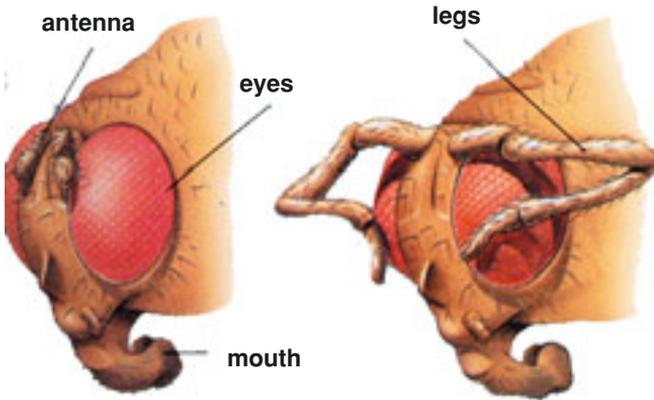
Harvard chemist George Whitesides made the following confession in his acceptance speech of the Priestley Medal, the highest award of the American Chemical Society:

The Origin of Life. This problem is one of the big ones in science. ... Most chemists believe, as do I, that life emerged spontaneously from mixtures of molecules in the prebiotic Earth. How? I have no idea. (George M. Whitesides, "Revolutions In Chemistry: Priestley Medalist George M. Whitesides' Address", Chemical and Engineering News, 85: 12-17, March 26, 2007)

The DNA molecule, located in the nucleus of a cell and which stores genetic information, is a magnificent databank. If the information coded in DNA were transcribed on paper, it would make a giant library consisting of an estimated 900 volumes of 500 pages each.

A very interesting insurmountable predicament emerges at this point for the evolutionists: DNA can replicate itself only with the help of some specialized proteins (enzymes). However, the synthesis of these enzymes can be realized only by the information coded in DNA. As they both depend on each other, they must exist at the same time for replication. This razes the scenario where life originated by itself to the ground. Prof. Leslie Orgel, an evolutionist of repute from the University of San Diego, California, confesses this fact in the September 1994 issue of the *Scientific American* magazine:

It is extremely improbable that proteins and nucleic acids, both of which are structurally complex, arose spontaneously in the same place at the same time. Yet it also seems impossible to have one without the other. And so, at first glance, one might have to conclude that life could never, in fact,



Evolutionists have been trying to form an example of useful mutation by subjecting flies to mutations since the beginning of the century. All they attained as a result of decades of studies are crippled, diseased and defective flies.

On the left: Head of a normal fruit fly On the right: A mutated fruit fly

have originated by chemical means. (Leslie E. Orgel, "The Origin of Life on Earth," Scientific American, vol. 271, October 1994, p. 78.)

No doubt, if it is impossible for life to have originated spontaneously through blind coincidence, then it must be accepted that life was created. This fact explicitly invalidates the theory of evolution, whose main purpose is to deny Creation.

IMAGINARY MECHANISMS OF EVOLUTION

The second important point that negates Darwin's theory is that both concepts put forward by the theory as "evolutionary mechanisms" were understood to have, in reality, no evolutionary power.

Darwin based his evolution allegation entirely on the mechanism of "natural selection". The importance he placed on this mechanism was evident in the name of his book: *The Origin of Species, By Means of Natural Selection...*

Natural selection holds that those living things that are stronger

and more suited to the natural conditions of their habitats will survive in the struggle for life. For example, in a deer herd under the threat of attack by wild animals, those that can run faster will survive. Therefore, the deer herd will be comprised of faster and stronger individuals. However, unquestionably, this mechanism will not cause deer to evolve and transform themselves into another living species, for instance, horses.

Therefore, the mechanism of natural selection has no evolutionary power. Darwin was also aware of this fact and had to state this in his book *The Origin of Species*:

Natural selection can do nothing until favourable individual differences or variations occur. (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, The Modern Library, New York, p. 127)

LAMARCK'S FALLACY

So, how could these “favorable variations” occur? Darwin tried to answer this question from the standpoint of the primitive understanding of science at that time. According to the French biologist Chevalier de Lamarck (1744-1829), who lived before Darwin, living creatures passed on the traits they acquired during their lifetime to the next generation. He asserted that these traits, which accumulated from one generation to another, caused new species to be formed. For instance, he claimed that giraffes evolved from antelopes; as they struggled to eat the leaves of high trees, their necks were extended from generation to generation.

Darwin also gave similar examples. In his book *The Origin of Species*, for instance, he said that some bears going into water to find food transformed themselves into whales over time. (Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, Harvard University Press, 1964, p. 184.)

However, the laws of inheritance discovered by Gregor Mendel (1822-84) and verified by the science of genetics, which flourished in



the twentieth century, utterly demolished the legend that acquired traits were passed on to subsequent generations. Thus, natural selection was left 'alone' and consequently rendered completely ineffective as an evolutionary mechanism.

NEO-DARWINISM AND MUTATIONS

In order to find a solution, Darwinists advanced the "Modern Synthetic Theory," or as it is more commonly known, Neo-Darwinism, at the end of the 1930s. Neo-Darwinism added mutations, which are distortions formed in the genes of living beings due to such external factors as radiation or replication errors, as the "cause of favorable variations" in addition to natural selection.



Today, the model that Darwinists espouse, despite their own awareness of its scientific invalidity, is Neo-Darwinism. The theory maintains that millions of living species were formed through a process whereby numerous complex organs of these organisms (e.g., ears, eyes, lungs, and wings) underwent “mutations”, that is, genetic disorders. Yet, there is an outright scientific fact that totally undermines this theory: **Mutations do not cause living beings to develop; on the contrary, they are always harmful.** The horrific images that appeared after the nuclear explosions in Chernobyl, Hiroshima and Nagasaki are the exact results brought about by mutations. The organisms with proper structures either died or were severely damaged by mutations.

The reason for this is very simple: **DNA has a very complex structure, and random effects can only harm it.** The American geneticist B. G. Ranganathan explains this as follows:

*First, genuine mutations are very rare in nature. Secondly, most mutations are harmful since they are random, rather than orderly changes in the structure of genes; any random change in a highly ordered system will be for the worse, not for the better. For example, if an earthquake were to shake a highly ordered structure such as a building, there would be a random change in the framework of the building which, in all probability, would not be an improvement. (B. G. Ranganathan, *Origins?, Pennsylvania: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1988, p. 7.*)*

According to the claims of Darwinists, mutations must produce proportionate and coherent changes all over the body. For example, as per the claims of Darwinists, if an ear is formed on the right side as a result of chance mutations just as they claim, chance mutations should also form a second ear on the left side that shares the same symmetry and properties, and hears just as well. The hammer, anvil and stirrup must each come into existence in the same perfect and equal state. Random mutations must form heart valves on both sides in the same way; the valves and auricles produced by random mutations must be formed simultaneously and equally compatible with

There is no single fossil showing that species developed gradually. An examination of the layers of the Earth's crust and the fossil record reveals that life came into being on Earth suddenly.



FALSE



one another; they must be flawless, in their proper places. Huge discrepancies would appear if this symmetry and order could not be

maintained in every organ of the body. Bizarre structures with its one ear upside down, one unusual tooth, one eye on the forehead while the other on the nose, would appear.

But living organisms do not possess such imbalances.

According to the claims of the Darwinists, everything formed by mutations must be symmetrical and compatible. However, all mutations are harmful. In the past, it was assumed that 99% of the mutations were harmful while the remaining 1% was neutral. Yet new researches revealed that those 1% of mutations that take place in those regions of the DNA that do not code proteins and were thus assumed to be harmless, are in fact harmful in the long run. That is why scientists named these mutations as 'silent mutations'. **It is impossible for mutations that are absolutely harmful to form rational, compatible, symmetrical organs at the same time.**

Mutations can be likened to shooting at an intact structure with a machine gun. Shooting at an intact object will completely ruin its structure. One of the bullets proving ineffective, or curing a pre-existing infection in the body by cauterizing it, does not change the result. The organism would already be ruined by the remaining 99 bullets that hit it.

FALSE



There are no fossil remains that support the tale of human evolution. On the contrary, the fossil record shows that there is an insurmountable barrier between apes and men. In the face of this truth, evolutionists fixed their hopes on certain drawings and models. They randomly place masks on the fossil remains and fabricate imaginary half-ape, half-human faces.

Lynn Margulis, a member of the US National Academy of Sciences, has made the following confession regarding the evident harmful effects of mutations:

New mutations don't create new species; they create offspring that are impaired. (Lynn Margulis, quoted in Darryl Madden, UMass Scientist to Lead Debate on Evolutionary Theory, *Brattleboro (Vt.) Reformer*, February 3, 2006)

Also in an interview in 2011, Margulis emphasized the fact that "there is no evidence" indicating that mutations modify organisms and thus give rise to new species:

*[N]eo-Darwinists say that new species emerge when mutations occur and modify an organism. I was taught over and over again that the accumulation of random mutations led to evolutionary change-led to new species. I believed it until I looked for evidence. (Lynn Margulis quoted in "Lynn Margulis: Q + A," *Discover Magazine*, April 2011, p. 68)*

LIVING FOSSILS REFUTE EVOLUTION

Fossils are evidence that evolution never happened. As revealed by the fossil record, living organisms were created complete with all their characteristics, and have never changed since they first appeared and for as long as they existed. Fish have always been fish, insects have always been insects and reptiles have always been reptiles. There are no scientific grounds for the claim that species gradually develop.

Sea Urchin

Period: Paleozoic era,
Carboniferous period
Age: 295 million years old



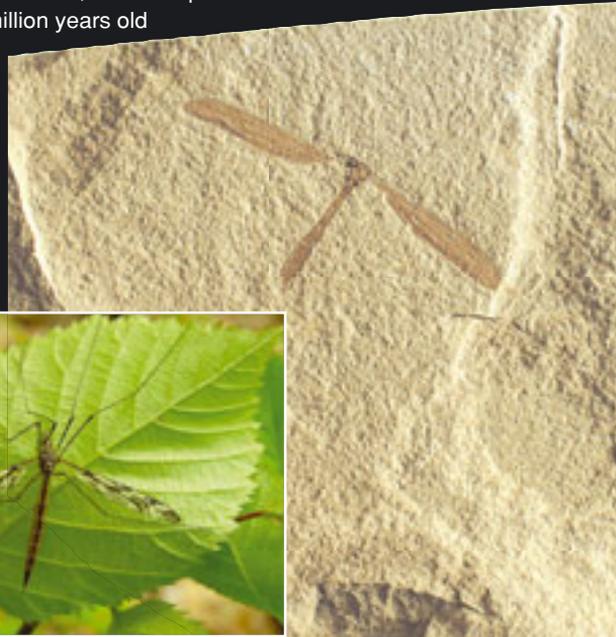
Sunfish

Period: Cenozoic era,
Eocene epoch
Age: 54-37 million years old



Crane fly

Period: Cenozoic era, Eocene epoch
Age: 48-37 million years old



Starfish

Period: Paleozoic era,
Ordovician period
Age: 490-443 million years old



Birch leaf

Period: Cenozoic era,
Eocene epoch
Age: 50 million years old



Spittlebug

Period: Mesozoic era,
Cretaceous period
Age: 125 million years old



Sequoia leaf

Period: Cenozoic era,
Eocene epoch
Age: 50 million years old

As Margulis stated, there is not a single evidence showing that random mutations lead to evolutionary changes, which in turn lead to the emergence of new species.

Indeed, no beneficial mutation – one that would advance the genetic code – has ever been observed. All mutations have proved to be harmful. It is now understood that mutation, which is presented as an “evolutionary mechanism”, is actually a genetic occurrence that harms living things, and leaves them disabled. (The most common effect of mutation on human beings is cancer.) Of course, a destructive mechanism cannot be an “evolutionary mechanism”. Natural selection, on the other hand, “can do nothing by itself”, as Darwin also accepted. This fact shows us that **there is no “evolutionary mechanism” in nature**. Since there is no evolutionary mechanism, no such imaginary process called “evolution” can take place.

THE FOSSIL RECORD: NO SIGN OF INTERMEDIATE FORMS

The fossil records constitute the clearest evidence showing us that the scenario suggested by the theory of evolution did not take place.

According to the unscientific supposition behind this theory, every living species has sprung from a predecessor. A previously existing species (evolutionists have yet to offer an explanation on how this species came into existence) turned into something else over time and all species have come into being in this way. In other words, this imaginary transformation took millions of years and proceeded gradually.

If this were the case, innumerable intermediary species should have existed and lived within this long transformation period.

For instance, some half-fish/half-reptiles would have lived in the past, which had acquired some reptilian traits in addition to the fish traits they already had. Or there should have existed some reptile-birds, which acquired some bird traits in addition to the reptilian

traits they already had. Since these would be in a transitional phase, they should be disabled, defective, crippled beings. Evolutionists refer to these imaginary creatures, which they believe to have lived in the past, as “transitional forms”.

If such animals ever really existed, there would be millions and even billions of them in number and variety. More importantly, the remains of these strange creatures should be present in the fossil record. In *The Origin of Species*, Darwin explained:

If my theory be true, numberless intermediate varieties, linking most closely all of the species of the same group together must assuredly have existed... Consequently, evidence of their former existence could be found only amongst fossil remains... (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species, New York: D. Appleton and Company. p. 161)

However, Darwin, having written these lines, was also well aware of the fact that no fossils of these intermediate forms had yet been found. He regarded this as a major difficulty for his theory. That is why, in one chapter of his book titled “Difficulties on Theory,” he wrote:

Firstly, why, if species have descended from other species by insensibly fine gradations, do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of the species being, as we see them, well defined?... But, as by this theory innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in countless numbers in the crust of the earth?... (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species, New York: D. Appleton and Company. p.154, 155)

Evolutionists generally interpret fossils in the light of their ideological expectations, for which reason the conclusions they arrive at are for the most part unreliable.



Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links? (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species, New York: D. Appleton and Company. p. 246)

DARWIN'S SHATTERED HOPES

However, although evolutionists have been making strenuous efforts to find fossils since the middle of the nineteenth century all over the world, **no transitional forms have yet been uncovered.** All the fossils, contrary to the evolutionists' expectations, show that life appeared on **Earth all of a sudden and fully-formed.**

Renowned British paleontologist, Derek V. Ager, admits this fact, even though he is an evolutionist:

The point emerges that if we examine the fossil record in detail, whether at the level of orders or of species, we find – over and over again – not gradual evolution, but the sudden explosion of one group at the expense of another. (Derek V. Ager, "The Nature of the Fossil Record," Proceedings of the British Geological Association, vol. 87, 1976, p. 133.)

This means that in **the fossil record, all living species suddenly emerge as fully formed, without any intermediate forms in between.** This is just the opposite of Darwin's assumptions. Furthermore, this is very strong evidence that **all living things are created.** The only explanation of a living species emerging instantaneously and completely in every detail without any evolutionary ancestor is that it was created. This fact is admitted also by the widely-known evolutionist biologist Douglas Futuyma:

Creation and evolution, between them, exhaust the possible explanations for the origin of living things. Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not. If they did not, they must have developed from pre-existing species by some process of modification. If they did appear in a fully developed state, they must indeed have been created by some omnipotent intelligence. (Douglas J. Futuyma, Science on Trial, Pantheon Books, New York, 1983, p. 197)

Today, there are 700 million unearthed fossils. **All these fossils reveal that living beings emerged fully developed and in a perfect state on the Earth.** It is as if the fossils are saying “We did not evolve through evolutionary processes.” That means, contrary to Darwin’s supposition, “the origin of species” cannot be explained by evolution, but is explained by Creation.

THE TALE OF HUMAN EVOLUTION

The subject most often brought up by advocates of the theory of evolution is the subject of the origin of man. The Darwinist claim holds that man evolved from so-called ape-like creatures. During this alleged evolutionary process, which is supposed to have started four to five million years ago, some “transitional forms” between man and his imaginary ancestors are supposed to have existed. According to this completely imaginary scenario, four basic “categories” are listed:

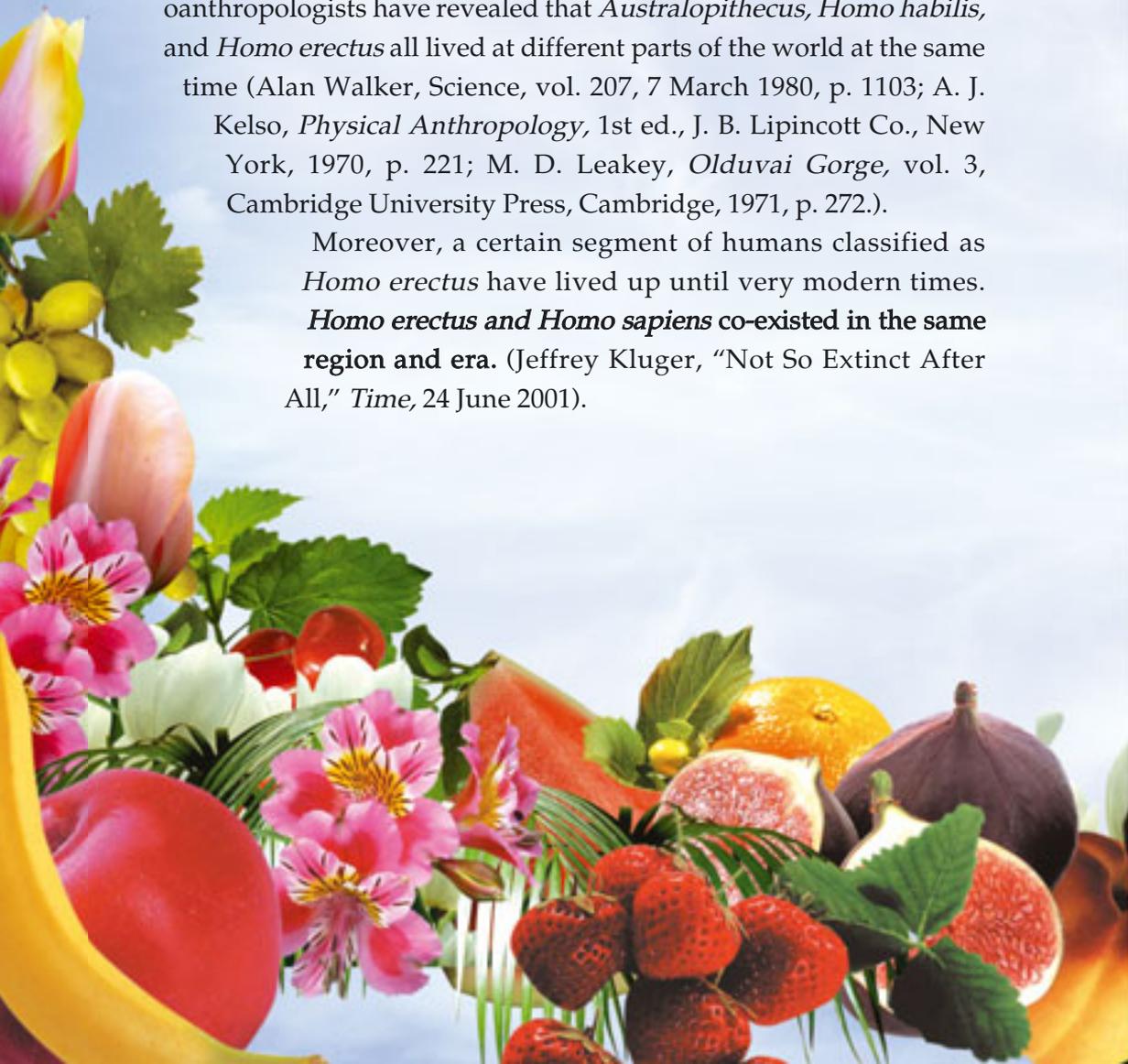
1. *Australopithecus*
2. *Homo habilis*
3. *Homo erectus*
4. *Homo sapiens*

Evolutionists call man’s so-called first ape-like ancestors *Australopithecus*, which means “Southern ape”. These living beings are actually nothing but an ape species that has become extinct. Extensive research done on various *Australopithecus* specimens by two world famous anatomists from England and the USA, namely, Lord Solly Zuckerman and Prof. Charles Oxnard, shows that these apes belonged to an ordinary ape species that became extinct and bore no resemblance to humans (Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond the Ivory Tower*, Toplinger Publications, New York, 1970, 75-14; Charles E. Oxnard, “The Place of Australopithecines in Human Evolution: Grounds for Doubt”, *Nature*, vol. 258, 389).

Evolutionists classify the next stage of human evolution as “homo”, that is, “man.” According to their claim, the living beings in the Homo series are more developed than *Australopithecus*. Evolutionists devise an imaginary evolution scheme by arranging different fossils of these creatures in a particular order. This scheme is imaginary because it has never been proven that there is any evolutionary relationship between these different classes.

By outlining the chain’s links as *Australopithecus* > *Homo habilis* > *Homo erectus* > *Homo sapiens*, evolutionists imply that each of these species is another’s ancestor. However, recent findings of paleo-anthropologists have revealed that *Australopithecus*, *Homo habilis*, and *Homo erectus* all lived at different parts of the world at the same time (Alan Walker, *Science*, vol. 207, 7 March 1980, p. 1103; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Anthropology*, 1st ed., J. B. Lipincott Co., New York, 1970, p. 221; M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1971, p. 272.).

Moreover, a certain segment of humans classified as *Homo erectus* have lived up until very modern times. ***Homo erectus* and *Homo sapiens* co-existed in the same region and era.** (Jeffrey Kluger, “Not So Extinct After All,” *Time*, 24 June 2001).



This situation indicates the invalidity of the claim that they are ancestors of one another. The late Stephen Jay Gould explained this deadlock of the theory of evolution, although he was himself one of the leading advocates of evolution in the twentieth century:

What has become of our ladder if there are three coexisting lineages of hominids (A. africanus, the robust australopithecines, and H. habilis), none clearly derived from another? Moreover, none of the three display any evolutionary trends during their tenure on earth. (S. J. Gould, Natural History, vol. 85, 1976, p. 30)

Put briefly, the scenario of human evolution, which is “upheld” with the help of various drawings of some “half ape, half human” creatures appearing in the media and textbooks, that is, frankly, propaganda, is nothing but **a tale with no scientific foundation.**

Lord Solly Zuckerman, one of the most famous and respected scientists in the U.K., who carried out research on this subject for years and studied Australopithecus fossils for 15 years, finally concluded, despite being an evolutionist himself, **that there is, in fact, no such family tree branching out from ape-like creatures to man.**

Zuckerman also made an interesting “spectrum of science” ranging from those he considered scientific to those he considered unscientific. According to Zuckerman’s spectrum, the most “scientific” – that is, depending on concrete data – fields of science are chemistry and physics. After them come the biological sciences and then the social sciences. At the far end of the spectrum, which is the part considered to be most “unscientific”, are “extra-sensory perception” – concepts such as telepathy and a sixth sense – and finally “human evolution”. Zuckerman explains his reasoning:



We then move right off the register of objective truth into those fields of presumed biological science, like extrasensory perception or the interpretation of man's fossil history, where to the faithful [evolutionist] anything is possible – and where the ardent believer [in evolution] is sometimes able to believe several contradictory things at the same time. (Solly Zuckerman, Beyond the Ivory Tower, New York: Toplinger Publications, 1970, p. 19)

The tale of human evolution boils down to nothing but the prejudiced interpretations of some unearthed fossils by certain people who blindly adhere to their theory.

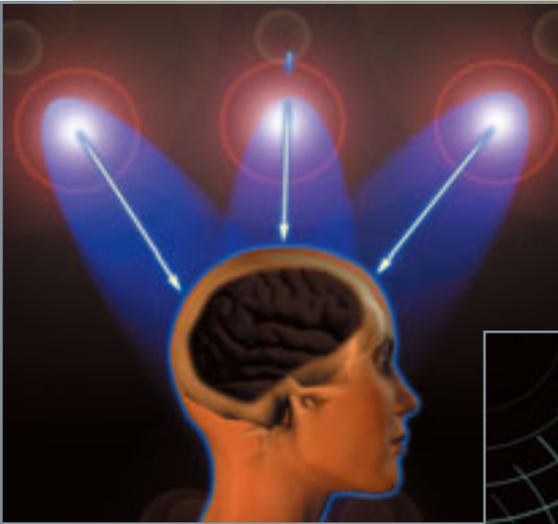
WHY A MUSLIM CANNOT BE AN ADVOCATE OF EVOLUTION

Based on the knowledge of the 1940s and 1950s, some Muslims imagine that evolution is a theory supported by science, and try to reconcile it with Islam employing a strange logic which suggests that 'Muslims knew about evolution long before Darwin.' This logic is a product of serious lack of knowledge. Science has proven the invalidity of evolution. The fact science reveals is the fact of Creation.

The fact that Muslims believe in, and the Qur'an clearly states, is that God created everything. Therefore, it is impossible for a Muslim to advocate the same things with the theory of evolution, which is a pagan superstition dating back to the time of the ancient Egyptians and Sumerians, explaining everything with coincidences.

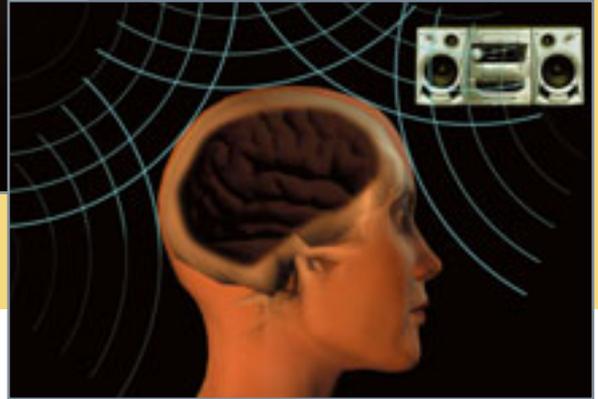
God surely could have created the living organisms through evolution if He had wished so. However, the Qur'an does not contain any such information or any verse supporting the gradual formation of life forms as claimed by evolutionists. Had such a manner of creation existed, we would have seen it in the verses of the Qur'an with its elaborate explanations. But on the contrary, God informs us in the Qur'an that life and the universe is created miraculously with God's commandment, 'Be'.

He is the Originator of the heavens and earth. When He de-



Inside the brain is utter darkness. Light cannot penetrate into the brain.

The brain is soundproof as much as it is lightproof. Therefore, no matter how loud the sound we may hear, inside our brains it is completely silent. However, within this silence resides a consciousness that interprets the electrical signals as a favorite song, the voice of a friend or the ring of the phone. This consciousness is our soul.



cides on something, He just says to it, 'Be!' and it is." (Surat al-Baqara, 117)

The fact God heralds in the Qur'an is that mankind was created out of nothing, in the finest form:

We created man in the finest mold. (Surat at-Tin, 4)

He created the heavens and the earth with truth and formed you, giving you the best of forms. And He is your final destination. (Surat at-Taghabun, 3)

THE PROPHET ADAM (PBUH) AND ALL MANKIND EXISTED IN THE SPIRITUAL REALM BEFORE THE UNIVERSE WAS CREATED

In the Qur'an, God informs us He created mankind in the spiritual realm even before the creation of the Universe and called everyone to testify:

When your Lord took out all their descendants from the loins of the children of Adam and made them testify against themselves 'Am I not your Lord?' they said, 'We testify that indeed You are!' Lest you say on the Day of Rising, 'We knew nothing of this.' (Surat al-A'raf, 172)

As it is seen, God informs us in the verse that mankind was brought into being before the universe, that they were created flawlessly and were fully developed, and that they testified and promised that God is their Lord. According to the information imparted by the verse, fully developed, talking, hearing, promising, testifying human beings existed with all their organs and all their physical characteristics even before the universe was created.

The original Arabic verse is as below:

وَإِذْ أَخَذَ رَبُّكَ مِنْ بَنِي آدَمَ مِنْ ظُهُورِهِمْ ذُرِّيَّتَهُمْ
وَأَشْهَدَهُمْ عَلَىٰ أَنفُسِهِمْ أَلَسْتُ بِرَبِّكُمْ قَالُوا بَلَىٰ
شَهِدْنَا أَنْ تَقُولُوا يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ إِنَّا كُنَّا عَنْ هَذَا غَافِلِينَ

Wa iz akhaza rabbuka mim bani a_dama min zuhu_rihim zurriyyatahum wa asyhadahum 'ala_anfusihim, alastu bi rabbikum, qa_lu_bala_ - syahidna_ - an taqu_lu_yaumal qiya_mati inna_kunna_ 'an ha_za_ga_filin(a).

Wa iz akhaza: And when (He) took out

(iz: you know, remember, then, at that time, ... when... because, as, hence)

rabbuka: your Lord

mim bani a_dama: from the children of Adam

min zuhu_rihim: from their loins

zurriyyatahum: their descendant, their lines, their lineage

wa asyhadahum: and made them testify

'ala_anfusihim: against themselves

alastu: am I not?

bi rabbikum: your Lord

qa_lu: they said

bala: yes

syahidna: we testify

an taqu_lu: lest, so that you say not

yaumul qiya_mati: the Day of Rising

inna: certainly we, genuinely we

kunna: we are, ... we were

'an ha_za: of this

ga_filin(a): unaware, knew nothing

The Arabic word “zurriyyat” (descendant) used in the verse, is used 18 more times in the Qur’an. The meaning of this word in all the verses it is used in is ‘mankind’ or ‘human generation’ as all the Islamic scholars unanimously agree. In this verse, there is a reference to the descendants of Adam - the line of the Prophet Adam (pbuh)-meaning all human beings that have lived and will live on earth. That is because, had that been a promise taken only from the person of the Prophet Adam (pbuh), the verse would have read ‘When your Lord made Adam testify.’ As the verse states **‘When your Lord took out all their descendants from the loins of the children of Adam’, there is a reference to all the descendants of the Prophet Adam (pbuh), meaning all mankind.**

The Arabic word ‘iz’ (meaning; remember that time, when) refers to the time when this address was made to the descendants of the Prophet Adam (pbuh), meaning to all mankind. The word ‘iz’ is a preposition used while talking about an incident that took place in the past. It means ‘remember this incident that took place in the past’. What is meant here is the testimony, the promise all humankind gave in the past, even before the universe was created.

In another verse of the Qur’an, it is stated that people will die twice and will be given life twice:

They will say, 'Our Lord, twice You caused us to die and twice You gave us life. We admit our wrong actions. Is there no way out?' (Surah Ghafir, 11)

The first death and life mentioned in this verse is the way people—in a sense—die after they gave this promise in the spiritual realm, and then are given life by God using their parents as instruments and are sent to this world. The second death is the physical death that we know of in this world. After that, people will be given life for the second time in the Hereafter.

When this is the case, the 'gradual formation of mankind' claims of those who assert that creation through evolution is mentioned in the Qur'an become utterly invalid. Humans did not come into existence in a gradual manner. The whole of mankind, the Prophet Adam (pbuh), and all the other prophets existed in the spiritual realm even before the whole universe was created. The claim that the Prophet Adam (pbuh) and the rest of mankind turned into modern man through a set of evolutionary processes does not hold any truth.

The Prophet Adam (pbuh), just like the rest of humanity, existed in the spiritual realm even before the universe was created, and then was created in Heaven, later to be sent to the Earth:

Your Lord said to the angels, 'I am going to create a human being out of clay. When I have formed him and breathed My Soul into him, fall down in prostration to him!' (Surah Sâd, 71-72)

But satan made them slip up by means of it, expelling them from where they were. We said, 'Go down from here as enemies to each other! You will have residence on the earth and enjoyment for a time.' (Surat al-Baqara, 36)

In another verse of the Qur'an, God informs us about the promise given by all mankind in the spiritual realm as follows:

Remember God's blessing to you and the covenant He made with you when you said, 'We hear and we obey.' Have fear of God. God knows what the heart contains. (Surat al-Ma'ida, 7)

Those who gave their promises to God in the spiritual realm were not part human and part other creatures, with incomplete forms and undeveloped limbs. They were complete and conscious humans. This is a clear proof that creation through evolution does not exist in the Qur'an.

THOSE MUSLIMS WHO ADVOCATE EVOLUTION ARE UNABLE TO EXPLAIN THE CREATION OF ANGELS AND THE JINNI

When those who claim that mankind developed through an evolutionary process are asked about how angels and the jinni were created, their answer will be 'God created them out of nothing'. It is quite forbidding that these individuals, who are aware of and acknowledge the fact that angels and the jinni are creations of God, fail to realize that God created mankind in the same manner. It is highly surprising that they fail to see that our Almighty Lord, Who created angels with His command 'Be', created mankind in the same manner. Likewise, God creates angels in human form, instantaneously. The angels who visited the Prophet Abraham had the appearance of fully developed and flawless human beings and were created instantaneously.

God informs in the Qur'an that the jinni, unlike mankind, were created from fire:

He created man from dry earth like baked clay; and He created the jinn from a fusion of fire. (Surat ar-Rahman, 14-15)

As God revealed in the Qur'an, the creation of angels is also quite different from the creation of mankind. In the following verse, God informs us about the creation of angels:

Praise be to God, the Bringer into Being of the heavens and earth, He who made the angels messengers, with wings – two, three or four. He adds to creation in any way He wills. God has power over all things. (Surah Fatir, 1)

As clearly understood from the statement in the verse, angels also have a very distinct appearance, very different from that of humans. Additionally, God informs us in the Qur'an that both angels and the jinni were created before mankind. It is very easy for God to create. Our Lord is the One Who creates out of nothing and without cause. Just as He created the jinni and angels out of nothing and in distinct forms, so did He create mankind as a separate creature out of nothing, without any need for evolutionary processes. The same is also true for other life forms such as animals and plants. Here is the explicit truth explained in the Qur'an: God created all beings instantaneously and out of nothing without subjecting them to evolution; in other words, without turning them into other species.

MUSLIMS WHO ADVOCATE EVOLUTION CANNOT OFFER ANY EXPLANATION FOR THE MIRACLES MENTIONED IN THE QUR'AN

God informs us in the Qur'an that when the Prophet Moses (pbuh) threw his staff to the ground, by God's will, it turned into a living snake. When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) throws his staff to the ground, an inanimate tree branch turns into a living snake, and when he takes it in his hand, it reverts back to an inanimate tree branch, and when he throws it once more to the ground, it again comes to life. In other words, an inanimate matter comes to life and then dies, and then comes to life again. With this miracle, God shows us the constant Creation. God commands in the verses:

He threw it down and suddenly it was a slithering snake. Say: He said, 'Take hold of it and have no fear. We will return it to its original form. (Surat Ta Ha, 20-21)

Throw down what is in your right hand. It will swallow up their handiwork. Their handiwork is just a magician's trick. Magicians do not prosper wherever they go.' (Surat Ta Ha, 69)

Throw down your staff.' Then when he saw it slithering like a snake he turned and fled and did not turn back again. 'Have no fear, Musa. In My Presence the Messengers have no fear.' (Surat an-Naml, 10)

When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) throws his staff to the ground, as a blessing of God, an inanimate piece of wood turns into a very much alive creature that slithers and swallows the conjurations of the others; in other words, a creature with a functional digestive system. This transformation takes place instantaneously. Thus, God shows people an example of how living organisms are created out of nothing. An inanimate matter comes to life by God simply willing it, in other words, with His command 'Be'. This miracle, God granted to the Prophet Moses (pbuh), shattered the superstitious evolutionary beliefs of the Egyptians at the time with a single blow, and even those who were against the Prophet Moses (pbuh) realized the truth at that very moment, renouncing their superstitious beliefs and believing in God.

God informs us in the Qur'an about how the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) made a clay object in the shape of a bird and breathed into it, and how the bird came to life by God's Will:

Remember when God said, "Jesus, son of Mary, remember My blessing to you and to your mother when I reinforced you with the Purest Spirit so that you could speak to people in the cradle and when you were fully grown; and when I taught you the Book and Wisdom, and the Torah and the Gospel; and when you created a bird-shape out of clay by My permission, and then breathed into it and it became a bird by My permission..." (Surat al-Ma'ida, 110)

A bird comes to life without being bound to any cause, by God's leave and miracle. A living bird emerging from inanimate matter is one example of Almighty God's peerless, causeless and sublime creation. Through this miracle bestowed upon him by God, the Prophet Jesus (pbuh) also reveals the illogicality and invalidity of evolutionist thinking. It is impossible for those who try to arbitrarily reconcile Islam with evolution to offer an explanation of these miracles of our Lord.

Just as God did not create the jinni, angels, the women of Heaven (houris), the male servants of Heaven (gillmans), the children of Heaven, palaces and gardens of Heaven, hell and its guardians through evolution, so did He not create mankind through evolution. God created every detail in Heaven; the high palaces, ornaments, gardens, birds, foods and infinite blessings instantly and out of nothing without any evolutionary process. The mansions in the Heaven, rivers of milk, thrones and jewels of Heaven were all created by God's command "Be". No cause is needed such as foremen, tailors or craftsmen for those to appear. Just as the fruits of Heaven such as date palms and figs or the jewels of heaven such as pearls and mother-of-pearls were not created by means of evolution in Heaven, they are not created by means of evolution in this world either. Creation is not through evolution, neither in this world, nor in Heaven. (For further information, refer to: Why Darwinism Is Incompatible with the Qur'an, Harun Yahya (Adnan Oktar))

DARWINIAN FORMULA!

Besides all the technical evidence we have dealt with so far, let us now examine what kind of an irrational belief the evolutionists have with an example so simple as to be understood even by children:

The theory of evolution claims that life is formed by chance. According to this irrational claim, lifeless and unconscious atoms came together to form the cell and then they supposedly formed

other living things, including man. Let us think about that. When we bring together the elements that are the building blocks of life such as carbon, phosphorus, nitrogen, and potassium, only a heap is formed. No matter what treatment it undergoes, this atomic heap cannot form even a single living being. If you like, let us formulate an “experiment” on this subject and let us examine what evolutionists really claim about the “Darwinian formula”:

Let evolutionists put plenty of the materials present in the composition of living things, such as phosphorus, nitrogen, carbon, oxygen, iron, and magnesium, into big barrels. Moreover, let them add in these barrels any material that does not even exist under normal conditions, but that they think is necessary. Let them add in this mixture as many amino acids and as many proteins - not a single one of which can by any means be formed by chance - as they like. Let them expose these mixtures to as much heat and moisture as they like. Let them stir these with whatever technologically developed device they like. Let them put the foremost scientists beside these barrels. Let these experts wait in turn beside these barrels for billions or even trillions of years. Let them be free to use anything they believe to be necessary for a living being’s formation.

No matter what they do, they cannot produce from these barrels a living being. They cannot produce giraffes, lions, bees, canaries, horses, dolphins, roses, orchids, lilies, carnations, bananas, oranges, apples, dates, tomatoes, melons, watermelons, figs, olives, grapes, peaches, peafowls, pheasants, multicolored butterflies, or any of the other millions of other living beings such as these. Indeed, they could not obtain even a single cell of any living being.

Briefly, **unconscious atoms cannot form a cell** by coming together. They cannot make a new decision and divide this cell into two, then make other decisions and create the professors who invented the electron microscope and then examine their own cell structure under that microscope. **Life only comes with God’s superior creation.** The

theory of evolution, which claims the opposite, is a total fallacy, completely contrary to reason. Thinking even a little bit on about the claims of evolutionists discloses this reality, just as in the above example.

TECHNOLOGY IN THE EYE AND THE EAR

Another subject that remains unanswered by the theory of evolution is the excellent quality of perception in the eye and the ear.

Before passing on to the subject of the eye, let us briefly answer the question of how we see. Light rays coming from an object fall upside down on the retina in the eye. Here, these light rays are transmitted into electrical signals by cells and reach a tiny spot at the back of the brain, the “center of vision”. These electrical signals are then perceived in this center as an image. Given this brief technical explanation, let us do some thinking.

The brain is insulated from light. That means that it is completely dark inside the brain, and that no light reaches the place where it is located. Thus, the “center of vision” is never touched by light and may even be the darkest place you have ever known. However, you observe a luminous, bright world in this pitch-black darkness.

The image formed in the eye is so sharp and so distinct that even the technology of the twenty-first century has not been able to attain that clarity and sharpness. For instance, look at the book you are reading, your hands with which you are holding it, then lift your head and look around you. Have you ever seen such a sharp and distinct image as you now see, with any other device? Even the most developed television screen produced by the greatest television manufacturer in the world cannot provide such a sharp image for you. For more than 100 years, thousands of engineers have been trying to achieve this sharpness. Factories, huge premises have been established, much research has been done, plans and designs have been made for this purpose. Again, look at a TV screen and the book

you hold in your hands. You will see that there is a big difference in sharpness and distinction. Moreover, the TV screen shows you a two-dimensional image, whereas with your eyes, you watch from a three-dimensional perspective which adds depth.

For many years, tens of thousands of engineers have tried to make a three-dimensional TV and achieve the vision quality of the eye. Yes, they have made a three-dimensional television system, but it is not possible to watch it without putting on special 3-D glasses; moreover, it is only artificially three-dimensional. The background is more blurred, the foreground appears like a paper setting. Never has it been possible to produce as sharp and distinct vision as that of the eye. In both the camera and the television, there is a comparative loss of image quality.

Evolutionists claim that the mechanism producing this sharp and distinct image has been formed by haphazard events. Now, if somebody told you that the television in your room was formed as a result of coincidences, that all of its atoms just happened to come together and make up this device that produces an image, what would you think? How can unconscious atoms do what thousands of people cannot?

If a device producing a more primitive image than **the eye could not have been formed by chance**, then it is very evident that the eye and the image seen by the eye could not have been formed by chance. The same is valid for the ear as well. The outer ear picks up the available sounds by the auricle and directs them to the middle ear, the middle ear transmits the sound vibrations by intensifying them, and the inner ear sends these vibrations to the brain by translating them into electrical signals. Just as with the eye, the act of hearing is finalized in the center of hearing in the brain.

The situation of the eye is also true for the ear. That is, **the brain is insulated from sound** just as it is from light. It does not let any sound in. Therefore, no matter how noisy the outside is, the inside of the

brain is completely silent. Nevertheless, the sharpest sounds are perceived in the brain. In **your completely silent brain, you listen to symphonies, and hear all the noises in a crowded place.** However, if the sound level in your brain were measured by a precise device at that moment, complete silence would be found to prevail there.

As is the case with sharp imagery, decades of effort have been spent in trying to generate and reproduce sound that is faithful to the original. Sound recorders, high-fidelity systems, many electronic devices and music systems sensing sound are all the results of such efforts. Despite all this technology and the thousands of engineers and experts who have been working on this endeavor, no sound has yet been obtained that has the same sharpness and clarity as the sound perceived by the ear.

Think of the highest-quality, highest-fidelity systems produced by the largest company in the music industry. Even with these devices, when sound is recorded, some of it is lost; or notice how when you turn on a hi-fi you always hear a slight interference or static even before the music starts. However, the sounds that are the products of the human body's technology are extremely sharp and clear. A human ear never perceives a sound accompanied by a hissing sound or with static as does a music set; rather, it perceives sound exactly as it is, sharp and clear. This is the way it has been since **the creation of man.** So far, no man-made video or audio recording apparatus has been as sensitive and successful in perceiving sensory data as are the eye and the ear. However, as far as seeing and hearing are concerned, a far greater truth lies beyond all this.

TO WHOM DOES THIS CONSCIOUSNESS THAT SEES AND HEARS WITHIN THE BRAIN BELONG?

Who watches an alluring world inside the brain, listens to symphonies and the twittering of birds, and smells the rose?

The stimulations coming from a person's eyes, ears, and nose

travel to the brain as electro-chemical nerve impulses. In biology, physiology, and biochemistry books, you can find many details about how this image forms in the brain. However, you will never come across an answer to the most important question: Who perceives these electro-chemical nerve impulses as images, sounds, odors, and sensory events in the brain? **There is a consciousness in the brain that perceives all this without feeling any need for an eye, an ear, and a nose.** To whom does this consciousness belong? Of course, it does not belong to the nerves, the fat layer, or neurons comprising the brain. This is why Darwinist-materialists, who believe that everything is composed of matter, cannot answer this question.

For **this consciousness is the spirit, the soul created by God,** which needs neither the eye to watch the images nor the ear to hear the sounds. Furthermore, it does not need the brain to think.

Everyone who reads this explicit and scientific answer should reflect on Almighty God, and fear and seek refuge in Him, for He fits this entire universe into a pitch-dark place of a few cubic centimeters in a three-dimensional, colored, shadowy, and luminous form.

A MATERIALIST SUPERSTITION

The information we have presented so far shows us that **the theory of evolution is incompatible with scientific findings.** The theory's claim regarding the origin of life is inconsistent with science, the evolutionary mechanisms it proposes have no evolutionary power, and fossils demonstrate that intermediate forms the theory necessitates have never existed. So, these certainly require that the theory of evolution be pushed aside as an disproven theory. This is how many ideas, such as the geocentric model of the universe, have been taken out of the realm of science throughout history.

However, the theory of evolution is persistently kept on the agenda of science. Some people even try to represent criticisms directed against it as an "attack on science" and to suppress adversatives. Why?

Because this theory is an indispensable dogmatic belief in some circles. These circles are **blindly devoted** to a materialist philosophy and adopt Darwinism because it is the only materialist explanation that can be put forward to explain the workings of nature.

Interestingly enough, they also confess this fact from time to time. A well-known geneticist and an outspoken evolutionist, Richard C. Lewontin from Harvard University, confesses that he is “first and foremost a materialist and then a scientist”:

It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us accept a material explanation of the phenomenal world, but, on the contrary, that we are forced by our a priori adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counter-intuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated. Moreover, that materialism is absolute, so we cannot allow a Divine [intervention]... (Richard Lewontin, “The Demon-Haunted World,” The New York Review of Books, January 9, 1997, p. 28)

These are explicit statements demonstrating that **Darwinism is a dogma** kept alive just for the sake of adherence to materialism. This dogma maintains that there is no being except for matter. Therefore, it argues that inanimate, unconscious matter brought life into being. It claims that millions of different living species (e.g., birds, fish, giraffes, tigers, insects, trees, flowers, whales, and human beings) originated as a result of interactions between matter, such as pouring rain, lightning flashes, and so on, or out of inanimate matter. This is a precept contrary to both reason and science. Yet Darwinists continue to ignorantly defend it just so as not to acknowledge, in their own eyes, the evident existence of God.

Anyone who does not look at the origin of living beings with a materialist prejudice sees this evident truth: **All living beings are works of a Creator**, Who is All-Powerful, All-Wise, and All-Knowing. **This Creator is God**, Who created the whole universe from non-existence, in the most perfect form, and fashioned all living beings.

THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION: THE MOST POTENT SPELL IN THE WORLD

It should be openly stated first and foremost that anyone free of prejudice and the influence of any particular ideology, who uses only his or her reason and logic, will clearly understand that belief in the theory of evolution, which brings to mind the superstitions of societies with no knowledge of true science, is quite impossible to embrace.

As explained above, those who believe in the theory of evolution think that a few atoms and molecules thrown into a huge vat could produce thinking, reasoning professors and university students; such scientists as Einstein and Hubble; such artists as Frank Sinatra and Charlton Heston; antelopes, lemon trees, and carnations. Moreover, as the scientists and professors who believe in this nonsense are educated people, it is quite justifiable to speak of this theory as "the most potent spell in history". Never before has any other belief or idea so taken away peoples' powers of reason, refused to allow them to think intelligently and logically, and hidden the truth from them as if they had been blindfolded. This necessitates an even worse and unbelievable blindness than the totems worshipped in some parts of Africa, the people of Saba worshipping the Sun, the tribe of the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) worshipping idols they had made with their own hands, or some among the people of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) worshipping the Golden Calf.

In fact, God has pointed to this lack of reason in the Qur'an. In many verses, He reveals that some peoples' minds will be closed and that they will be powerless to see the truth. Some of these verses are as follows:

As for those who do not believe, it makes no difference to them whether you warn them or do not warn them, they will not believe. God has sealed up their hearts and hearing and over their eyes is a blindfold. They will have a terrible punishment. (Surat al-Baqara, 6-7)

... They have hearts with which they do not understand. They have eyes with which they do not see. They have ears with which they do not hear. Such people are like cattle. No, they are even further astray! They are the unaware. (Surat al-A'raf, 179)

God informs us in the Surat al-Hijr that these people are under a spell that they do not believe even if they see miracles:

Even if We opened up to them a door into heaven, and they spent the day ascending through it, they would only say: "Our eyesight is befuddled! Or rather we have been put under a spell!" (Surat al-Hijr, 14-15)

Words cannot express just how astonishing it is that this spell should hold such a wide community in thrall, keeping people from the truth, and remaining unbroken for 150 years. It is understandable that one or a few people might believe in impossible, illogical scenarios and claims full of stupidity and illogicality. However, "spell" is the only possible word to use when people from all over the world believe that unconscious and lifeless atoms suddenly decided to come together and form a universe that functions with a flawless system of organization, discipline, reason, and consciousness; a planet named Earth with all its features so perfectly suited to life; and living things full of countless complex systems.

In fact, in the Qur'an God relates the incident of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and Pharaoh to show that some people who support atheistic philosophies actually influence others by use of spells. When Pharaoh was told about the true religion, he told the Prophet Moses (pbuh) to meet with his own magicians. When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) did so, he told them to demonstrate their abilities first. The verses continue:

He said: "You throw." And when they threw, they cast a spell on the people's eyes and caused them to feel great fear of



In the same way that the beliefs of people who worshipped crocodiles now seem odd and unbelievable, so the beliefs of Darwinists are just as incredible. Darwinists ignorantly regard chance and lifeless, unconscious atoms as a so-called creative force, and are as devoted to that false belief as if to a religion.

them. They produced an extremely powerful magic. (Surat al-A'raf, 116)

As we have seen, Pharaoh's magicians were able to deceive everyone, apart from the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and those who believed in him. However, his evidence broke the spell, or "swallowed up what they had forged," as revealed in the verse:

We revealed to Moses: "Throw down your staff." And it immediately swallowed up what they had forged. So the Truth took place and what they did was shown to be false. (Surat al-A'raf, 117-118)

The Prophet Moses' throwing his staff of inanimate wood and then that staff coming to life and instantly overthrowing the deceptions of the Pharaoh and his followers is like breaking the spell of evolution. When people realized that a spell had been cast upon them and that what they saw was just an illusion, Pharaoh's magi-

cians lost all credibility. In the present day too, unless those who, under the influence of a similar spell believe in these ridiculous claims of evolution under their scientific disguise and spend their lives defending them, abandon their superstitious beliefs, they also will be humiliated when the full truth emerges and the spell is broken. In fact, world-renowned British writer and philosopher Malcolm Muggeridge, who was an atheist advocating the theory of evolution for some sixty years, but who subsequently realized the truth, reveals the position in which the theory of evolution would find itself in the near future in these terms:

*I myself am convinced that the theory of evolution, especially the extent to which it's been applied, will be one of the great jokes in the history books in the future. Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis could be accepted with the incredible credulity that it has. (Malcolm Muggeridge, *The End of Christendom, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1980, p. 43*)*

That future is not far off: On the contrary, people will soon see that “coincidences” are not a deity, and will look back on **the theory of evolution as the worst deceit and the most terrible spell in the world.** That spell is now rapidly beginning to be lifted from people all over the world. Many people who see its true face are wondering with amazement how they could ever have been taken in by it.

NOTES:

1. Anton Pannekoek, *Marxism and Darwinism*, Translated by Nathan Weiser. Chicago, Charles H. Kerr & Company, USA Original Copyright, 1912
2. Conway Zirkle, *Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene*, Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1959, p.88
3. Conway Zirkle, *Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene*, Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1959, p.88
4. Janet Browne, *Charles Darwin The Power of Place*, Vol. II of a Biography, Princeton University Press, Princeton and Oxford, New Jersey, 2002, p.403
5. Conway Zirkle, *Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Scene*, Philadelphia: the University of Pennsylvania Press, 1959, p.527
6. Friedrich Engels, *Socialism: Utopian and Scientific*, Foreign Languages Press, Peking 1975, p. 67
7. Gertrude Himmelfarb, *Darwin and the Darwinian Revolution*, London: Chatto & Windus, 1959, pp. 348-9
8. Gertrude Himmelfarb, *Darwin and the Darwinian Revolution*, London: Chatto & Windus, 1959, p. 348
9. <http://www.fixedearth.com/hlsm.html>
10. Robert M. Young, *Darwinian Evolution and Human History*, Historical Studies on Science and Belief, 1980
11. E. Yaroslavsky, *Landmarks in the Life of Stalin* (Moscow: Foreign Languages Publishing house, 1940), pp. 8-12.
12. K. Mehnert, *Kampf um Mao's Erbe*, Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1977
13. Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood: The Struggle for Life for World Dominion Between Pope John Paul II, Mikhail Gorbachev, and the Capitalist West*, New York: Simon & Schuster, 1990, p.203-5
14. Douglas Futuyma, *Evolutionary Biology*, 2nd ed., Sunderland, MA: Sinauer, 1986, p.3
15. Alan Woods and Ted Grant, *Reason in Revolt, Vol. II: Dialectical Philosophy and Modern Science*, New York: Algora Publishing, 2003, p.106
16. Alan Woods and Ted Grant, *Reason in Revolt, Vol. II: Dialectical Philosophy and Modern Science*, New York: Algora Publishing, 2003, p.115
17. Anton Pannekoek, *Marxism and Darwinism*, 2013, pp. 22-24
18. Anton Pannekoek, *Marxism and Darwinism*, 2013, p.27
19. *Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905*
20. Vladimir Ilyic Lenin, "Proleterya Partisinin Din Konusundaki Tutumu" (Religious Attitude of Proleteria Party), *Proleterya*, Vol 45, 13
21. "Leninizm'in Sorunlari" [Leninism's Problems], Sol Publications, Turkey, November 1992
22. Vladimir I. Lenin, September 30, 1906, *Proletari*, Nr.5
23. Gracchus Babeuf, *La Guerre de Vendée et le système de dépopulation*, Tallandier, 1987
24. Stéphane Courtois, Nicolas Werth, Jean-Louis Panné, Andrzej Paczkowski, Karel bartosek, Jean-Louis Margolin, *Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.61
25. S.P. Melgunov, *La Terreur rouge en Russie 1918-1924*, p.81
26. Russian Center for the Conservation and Study of Historic Documents, Moscow (henceforth RTsKhIDNI), 2/1/6/898, Pavlyuchenkov, Krestyanskii Brest
27. Orlando Figes, *A People's Tragedy, A History of the Russian Revolution*, p.775
28. *Proletary*, No. 15, September 26 (13), 1905; *Lenin Collected Works*, Progress Publishers, 1972, Moscow, Volume 9, pp.283-285
29. Richard Pipes, *The Unknown Lenin: From the Secret Archive*, p. 181
30. *Message to the Tricontinental*, <http://www.marxists.org/archive/guevara/1967/04/16.htm>
31. Orlando Figes, *A People's Tragedy, A History of the Russian Revolution*, p.733
32. Orlando Figes, *A People's Tragedy, A History of the Russian Revolution*, p.734
33. Richard Pipes, *The Unknown Lenin: From the Secret Archive*, p.10
34. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.119
35. Richard Pipes, *A Concise History Of The Russian Revolution*, Vintage Books, New York, 1995, p.357

36. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, pp.123-124
37. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.125
38. Alex de Jonge, *Stalin and the Shaping of the Soviet Union*, William Collins Sons & Limited Co., Glasgow, 1987, p.33
39. Allan Bullock, *Hitler and Stalin: Parallel Lives*, Fontana Press, London, 1993, p.13
40. Orlando Figes, *A People's Tragedy, A History of the Russian Revolution*, p. 733
41. Orlando Figes, *A People's Tragedy, A History of the Russian Revolution*, p. 65
42. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 9
43. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.166
44. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 148
45. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 172
46. Brian Moynahan, *The Russian Century: A Photographic History of Russia's 100 Years*, Random House, New York, 1994, p.152
47. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 166-167
48. Dr. Dana Dalrymple, "The Great Famine in Ukraine," 1932-33, Introduction
49. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 154
50. Robert Conquest, *The Harvest of Sorrow : Soviet Collectivization and the Terror-Famine*, Oxford University Press, New York, 1986, p. 138
51. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 9-10
52. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 420
53. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 420 - 421
54. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 657 - 659
55. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 711-712
56. Assem Akram, *Histoire de la Guerre d'Afghanistan*, p.516; S. Courtis, N. Werth, J. L. Panne, A. Paczkowski, K. Bartosek, J. L. Margolin, *The Black Book of Communism*, pp. 711-712
57. Michael Barry, *La Resistance Afghane, du Grand Moghol à l'Invasion Soviétique*, Paris, Flammarion, "Champs" , 1989, p. 314; S. Courtis, N. Werth, J. L. Panne, A. Paczkowski, K. Bartosek, J. L. Margolin, *The Black Book of Communism*, pp. 712-713
58. Michael Barry, *La Résistance Afghane, du Grand Moghol à l'Invasion Soviétique*, Paris, Flammarion, 1989 pp.306-307; S. Courtis, N. Werth, J. L. Panne, A. Paczkowski, K. Bartosek, J. L. Margolin, *The Black Book of Communism*, p. 713
59. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 719
60. Alain Brossat, *Un Communisme Insupportable*, Paris, L'Harmattan, 1997, p.265; *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.750
61. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 752
62. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 752
63. Karl Marx, *Preface to a Contribution to the Critique of Political Economy*; Jozef Stalin
64. Surely Marxists see that the current situation is not like this. Therefore Marxists claim that workers who do not see themselves as "proletariat" are deceived by a "false consciousness" and that this is a trap of capitalists trying to impede the proletarian revolution.
65. Robert M.Young, *Darwinian Evolution and Human History*, Open University course on Darwin to Einstein: Historical Studies on Science and Belief, 1980
66. Richard Milner, *Encyclopedia of Evolution*, Facts on File Publisher, 1990, p. 82
67. Jacob Heilbrunn, "Mao More Than Ever," *The New Republic*, April 21, 1997
68. Benjamin Schwartz, *Chinese Communism and the Rise of Mao*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1951, p.37
69. Benjamin Schwartz, *Chinese Communism and the Rise of Mao*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1951, p.45
70. Charlotte Furth, *Ting Wen-chiang: Science and China's New Culture*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1970, p.27
71. Charlotte Furth, *Ting Wen-chiang: Science and China's New Culture*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1970, p.71
72. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, 1983, p.438

73. Michael Ruse, *The Long March of Darwin*, *New Scientist* 103 (Aug. 16, 1984) p.35
74. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, 1983, p.4
75. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, 1983, p.257
76. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, 1983, p.449-452
77. Clare Hollingworth, *Mao, Triad Paladin* Grafton Books, Glasgow, 1985, p.26
78. Clare Hollingworth, *Mao, Triad Paladin* Grafton Books, Glasgow, 1985, p.27
79. Clare Hollingworth, *Mao, Triad Paladin* Grafton Books, Glasgow, 1985, p.26
80. Jacob Heilbrunn, "Mao More Than Ever," *The New Republic*, April 21, 1997
81. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 491-492
82. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 492-495
83. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 493-494
84. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 493-494
85. Jasper Becker, *Hungry Ghosts: Mao's Secret Famine*, New York: The Free Press, 1996, p. 92
86. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 491
87. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, p.456
88. James Reeve Pusey, *China and Charles Darwin*, p.455
89. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 494-495
90. K. Mehnert, *Kampf um Mao's Erbe*, Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1977
91. Talk at an Enlarged Central Work Conference, January 30, 1962 (<http://www.maoism.org/msw/vol8/msw/862.htm>)
92. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 481-482
93. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 509
94. Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood*, p.406
95. Ken Ling, Miriam London and Tai-Ling Lee, *La Vengeance du Ciel: Un Jeune Chinois dans la Revolution Culturelle*, Paris, Laffont, 1981. (Original English version 1972) Pages 20-23.
96. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 520
97. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 470-471
98. Nien Cheng, *Vie et mort a Shangai*, Paris, Albin Michel, 1987, p.86
99. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 544; Donnet, Tibet, p.63
100. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 597; Pin Yathay, *Stay Alive, My Son*, p. 317
101. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 604
102. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 601
103. Laurence Picq, *Beyond the Horizon: Five Years with the Khmer Rouge*, trans. Patricia Norland (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1989), pp. 147-148
104. Pin Yathay, *Stay Alive, My Son*, p. 248
105. Haing Ngor, *Surviving the Killing Fields*, pp.139-140
106. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 611
107. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p.553
108. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 556
109. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 560
110. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 574
111. V.I. Lenin, *The Attitude of the Worker's Party to Religion, Proletariat*, No.45, May 13, 1909
112. V.I. Lenin, *Socialism and Religion*, *Nozvaya Zhin*, No.28, December 3, 1905
113. V.I. Lenin, *The Attitude of the Worker's Party to Religion, Proletariat*, No.45, May 13, 1909
114. V.I. Lenin, *The Attitude of the Worker's Party to Religion, Proletariat*, No.45, May 13, 1909
115. Robert Conquest, *The Harvest of Sorrow : Soviet Collectivization and the Terror-Famine* , Oxford University Press, New York, 1986, p. 138

116. Letter to Maxim Gorky, written on November 13 or 14, 1913; Lenin Collected Works, Progress Publishers, [1976], Moscow, Vol. 35, pp. 121-124; <http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1913/nov/00mg.htm>
117. Lenin, in a letter to Maxim Gorky in January 1913. See: J. M. Bochenski, "Marxism-Leninism and Religion," in B. R. Bociurkiw et al, eds., *Religion and Atheism in the USSR and Eastern Europe* (London: MacMillan, 1975), p. 11.
118. Lenin Collected Works, Progress Publishers, 1973, Moscow, Vol. 15, pp. 402-413; <http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1909/may/13.htm>
119. V.I. Lenin, Collected Works, pp. 83-87; <http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1905/dec/03.htm>
120. V.I. Lenin, Collected Works, pp. 83-87; <http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1905/dec/03.htm>
121. E. Yaroslavsky, *Landmarks in the Life of Stalin* (Moscow: Foreign Languages Publishing house, 1940), pp. 8-12.
122. J.V. Stalin, *Anarchism or Socialism?*, From J.V. Stalin, Works, Foreign Languages Publishing House, Moscow, 1954, Vol.1, p.302
123. Gaffar Tetik, *Bütün yönleriyle kömünizme karşı İslam [Islam vs communism in all aspects]*, p. 254
124. White Paper, Office of Tibet, London, February 2, 1996
125. Statement of Harry Wu Before the US Commission on International Religious Freedom, March 16, 2000
126. *The Black Book of Communism*, Harvard University Press Cambridge, p. 594
127. R. Payne, *The Life and Death of Lenin*, London: 1967, pp.609-610
128. Edward E. Ericson, Jr., *Solzhenitsyn – Voice from the Gulag, Eternity*, October 1985, p.23-24
129. Phillip E. Johnson, "The Gorbachev of Darwinism," *First Things*, January 1998, <https://www.firstthings.com/article/1998/01/the-gorbachev-of-darwinism>
130. Alan Woods and Ted Grant, *Reason in Revolt, Vol. II: Dialectical Philosophy and Modern Science*, New York: Algora Publishing, 2003, p. 106
131. Daniel C. Dennett, *Darwin's Dangerous Idea: Evolution and the Meaning of Life*, Touchstone, New York, 1996, p.309
132. V.I. Lenin, *One Step Forward, Two Steps Back*; <http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1904/onestep/ch06.htm>
133. James Walsh, "Mao Lives!," *Time*, January 10, 1994
134. Jacob Heilbrunn, "Mao More Than Ever," *The New Republic*, April 21, 1997
135. Jacob Heilbrunn, "Mao More Than Ever," *The New Republic*, April 21, 1997
136. Northern Cyprus, Minister of Foreign Affairs and Defence, www.pubinfo.gov.nc.tr/h040199b.htm
137. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
138. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
139. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
140. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
141. V.I. Lenin, "Marxism and Insurrection," A Letter to the Central Committee of the R.S.D.L.P.(B.), September 13-14, 1917; Lenin's Collected Works, Progress Publishers, Moscow, Volume 26, 1972, pp. 22-27
142. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
143. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
144. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
145. "The "Disarmament" Slogan" (October 1916); Collected Works, Vol. 23, pp. 94-104
146. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, June – November 1905
147. Lenin Collected Works, June – November 1905, Volume 9
148. Vladimir Ilyich Lenin, *Two Tactics of Social-Democracy in the Democratic*

- Revolution, "The Abolition of the Monarchist System and the Republic", 1905
149. From Abdullah Ocalan's message to celebrate the 13th anniversary of the PKK
150. <http://www.ankarastrateji.org/haber/cozum-sureci-pkk-nin-eylemlerini-durdurabildi-mi-919/>
151. http://www.radikal.com.tr/turkiye/koy_der_baskinin_otopsi_raporu_bicak_kur_sun_yanik-1218935
152. Kürdistan'da Halk Kahramanlığı [Popular Heroism in Kurdistan], p. 78
153. Özgür Yaşamla Diyaloglar [Dialogues with the Free Life], p. 201
154. Tasfiyeciliğin Tasfiyesi [The Liquidation of Liquidationism], p.153
155. PKK Founding Congress Speech, 1978, pp.13, 20
156. From Ocalan's speech on May 1, 1982
157. Kürdistan'da Halk Kahramanlığı [Popular Heroism in Kurdistan], Istanbul, March 2004, p. 87
158. Abdullah Ocalan, Seçme Yazılar [Selected Writings], Vol. I, p.195
159. Abdullah Ocalan, Seçme Yazılar [Selected Writings], Vol. I, p.213
160. Abdullah Ocalan, Seçme Yazılar [Selected Writings], Vol. I, p.213
161. Lenin: "Where to Begin", Collected Works, Vol. 5, Moscow, 1961, p. 19
162. Lenin Collected Works, Progress Publishers, 1964, Moscow, Vol. 6, "Revolutionary Adventurism"
163. V.I. Lenin, "Guerrilla Warfare"
164. Lenin, Collected Works, Progress Publishers, 1972, Moscow, Vol. 9, pp. 420-424
165. Lenin Collected Works, Volume 9, p. 346
166. A Personal War: America's Marxist Allies Against ISIS, Matt Bradley and Joe Parkinson, July 24, 2015; <http://www.wsj.com/articles/americas-marxist-allies-against-isis-1437747949>
167. Özgür Yaşamla Diyaloglar [Dialogues with the Free Life], October 2002, p. 257
168. Abdullah Öcalan, 'Sanat ve Edebiyatta Kürt Aydınlanması' [The Kurdish Enlightenment in Arts and Literature], p. 153
169. Sümer Rahip Devletinden Demokratik Uygarlığa [From the Priestly Sumerian State to Democratic Civilization], Vol. I, December 2001, p. 204
170. Sümer Rahip Devletinden Demokratik Uygarlığa [From the Priestly Sumerian State to Democratic Civilization], Vol. I, December 2001, p. 313
171. Sümer Rahip Devletinden Demokratik Uygarlığa [From the Priestly Sumerian State to Democratic Civilization], Vol. I, December 2001, p. 354
172. Burhan Semiz, PKK ve KCK'nın Din Stratejisi [The Religious Strategy of the PKK and KCK], p. 210
173. <http://www.state.gov/j/inl/rls/nrcrpt/2014/vol1/223081.htm>
174. <http://www.middleeasteye.net/in-depth/features/female-guerrilla-fighters-pkk-2044198184>
175. <http://www.sabah.com.tr/gundem/2012/07/03/yagmurdan-kacar-ken-doluya-tutuldular>
176. Abdullah Öcalan, "Nasıl Yaşamalı" [How to Live], p. 91
177. <http://www.milliyet.com.tr/2001/01/24/guncel/gun01.html>
178. <http://anfenglish.com/kurdistan/diplomacy-initiative-in-italy-by-the-rojava-committee>
179. <http://www.almonitor.com/pulse/en/originals/2015/02/turkey-france-kurdish-guerrillas-elysee.html>
180. <http://www.wsj.com/articles/americas-marxist-allies-against-isis-1437747949>
181. Robert M. Young, Darwinian Evolution and Evolution And Human History, Radio talk given in an Open University course on Darwin to Einstein: Historical Studies on Science and Belief, 1980
182. Robert M. Young, Darwinian Evolution and Evolution And Human History, Radio talk given in an Open University course on Darwin to Einstein: Historical Studies on Science and Belief, 1980
183. Bertrand Russell, The Problems of Philosophy, Enhanced Media Publishing, Los Angeles, CA, 2016, p. 12

*They said “Glory be to You! We have no
knowledge except what You have taught us.
You are the All-Knowing, the All-Wise.”
(Surat al-Baqara, 32)*